

9-2-1949

Aspects of Mark Twain as a Social Critic

Thomas A. Erhard

Follow this and additional works at: https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/engl_etds



Part of the [English Language and Literature Commons](#)

Recommended Citation

Erhard, Thomas A.. "Aspects of Mark Twain as a Social Critic." (1949). https://digitalrepository.unm.edu/engl_etds/123

This Thesis is brought to you for free and open access by the Electronic Theses and Dissertations at UNM Digital Repository. It has been accepted for inclusion in English Language and Literature ETDs by an authorized administrator of UNM Digital Repository. For more information, please contact disc@unm.edu.

UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO-UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



A14429 083989

ERHARD



MARK
TWAIN AS
A SOCIAL
CRITIC

378.789

Un 3 0e

1950

cop. 2

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO



Call No.

378.789

Un30e

1950

cop.2

Accession
Number

144003

DATE DUE

| | | |
|---------------------|--|-----------------------------|
| AUG 14 1964 | | |
| AUG 14 RECD | | |
| NOV 8 - 1964 | | JAN 26 '78 UNM |
| OCT 2 RECD | | |
| APR - 9 1965 | | JUN - 5 '71 UNM 2w |
| APR - 9 RECD | | RECD UNM MAY 27 '71 |
| MAY 13 1965 | | NOV 26 '74 UNM 2w |
| | | RECD UNM DEC - 9 '74 |
| MAY 13 RECD | | DEC 28 '77 |
| DEC 16 1965 | | |
| DEC 5 RECD | | RECD UNM DEC 27 '77 |
| | | LED FEB 2 '82 |
| JAN 28 1968 | | RECD UNM FEB 22 '82 |
| JAN 17 RECD | | |
| | | |
| APR 26 1968 | | |
| APR 20 RECD | | |

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO LIBRARY

MANUSCRIPT THESES

Unpublished theses submitted for the Master's and Doctor's degrees and deposited in the University of New Mexico Library are open for inspection, but are to be used only with due regard to the rights of the authors. Bibliographical references may be noted, but passages may be copied only with the permission of the authors, and proper credit must be given in subsequent written or published work. Extensive copying or publication of the thesis in whole or in part requires also the consent of the Dean of the Graduate School of the University of New Mexico.

This thesis by Thomas A. Erhard
has been used by the following persons, whose signatures attest their acceptance of the above restrictions.

A Library which borrows this thesis for use by its patrons is expected to secure the signature of each user.

NAME AND ADDRESS

DATE

A Thesis

In partial fulfillment of the
Requirements for the degree of
Master of Arts in English

The University of New Mexico
1949

LIBRARY ACQUISITION

Unpublished manuscripts submitted by the Library are given and accepted in the University of New Mexico Library as part of the collection and are to be held and used in the same manner as the published material. The right of the author, publisher, or other person to be named in the title may be copied only with the permission of the author and proper credit must be given in subsequent editions or in any other form. The University of New Mexico Library is not responsible for the loss or damage of any material in the collection.

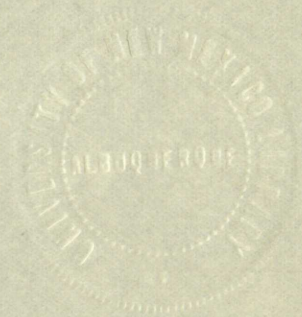
This library is a part of the University of New Mexico and has been established by the University of New Mexico and the University of New Mexico.

A library which contains the most complete collection of books and periodicals in the field of the University of New Mexico.

DATE

NAME / LIBRARY

ASPECTS OF
MARK TWAIN AS A SOCIAL CRITIC



By
Thomas A. Erhard

A Thesis
In partial fulfillment of the
Requirements for the degree of
Master of Arts in English

The University of New Mexico
1949



OFFICE
OF THE
SOLICITOR
GENERAL

THE OFFICE OF THE SOLICITOR GENERAL

This thesis, directed and approved by the candidate's committee, has been accepted by the Graduate Committee of the University of New Mexico in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of

MASTER OF ARTS

E. H. Castetter

DEAN

Aug. 2, 1949

DATE

ASPECT OF
MARK TWAIN AS A SOCIAL CRITIC

BY

Thomas A. Erhard

Thesis committee

Dave J. Smith

CHAIRMAN

T. M. Pearce

Norton B. Crowell

This thesis has been accepted by the Graduate Council of the University of New Mexico in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of

MASTERS OF ARTS

RECEIVED
UNIVERSITY OF NEW MEXICO

Thesis Committee

378.789
Un30e
1950
cop. 2

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| CHAPTER | PAGE |
|---|------|
| INTRODUCTION | iv |
| Purpose of the study | iv |
| Definition of terms | v |
| Acknowledgments | v |
| I. DEVELOPMENT OF MARK TWAIN CRITICISM | 1 |
| Before <u>The Ordeal of Mark Twain</u> | 1 |
| Brooks and his decade | 14 |
| Criticism since <u>Mark Twain's America</u> | 30 |
| II. WARS | 61 |
| War in general | 61 |
| The Mexican War | 66 |
| The Civil War | 70 |
| The Spanish-American War | 85 |
| Other wars | 93 |
| III. WESTWARD EXPANSION AND IMPERIALISM | 104 |
| The Mississippi West | 104 |
| The Far West | 110 |
| Expansion abroad | 122 |
| Sandwich Islands | 122 |
| Far East | 128 |
| IV. MONARCHY AND PROGRESS | 136 |
| Monarchy | 136 |
| Progress | 143 |

144003

378.77
 11.30
 1920
 1920

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| CHAPTER | |
|---------|--|
| I. | INTRODUCTION iv |
| | Purpose of the study iv |
| | Definition of terms v |
| | Acknowledgments v |
| I. | DEVELOPMENT OF MEXICAN RAILROADS |
| | Before the period of revolution |
| | During and after the revolution |
| | Criticism of the Mexican railroad system |
| II. | WAR |
| | War in general |
| | The Mexican war |
| | The Civil War |
| | The Spanish-American War |
| | Other wars |
| III. | WESTWARD EXPANSION AND IMPERIALISM |
| | The Manifest West |
| | The Far West |
| | Expansion abroad |
| | Spanish Islands |
| | Far East |
| IV. | MONARCHY AND REPUBLICANISM |
| | Monarchy |
| | Republic |

| CHAPTER | PAGE |
|--|------|
| V. BIG BUSINESS, MONOPOLY, AND SPECULATION | 150 |
| Twain's attitude toward speculation and | |
| financial abuses | 152 |
| Twain's connection with the Great Barbecue . . . | 163 |
| His own speculation | 167 |
| VI. MINORITY GROUPS | 175 |
| Spanish-Americans | 175 |
| Indians | 176 |
| The Chinese | 183 |
| Hebrews | 190 |
| Negroes | 193 |
| Laborers and the poor | 202 |
| VII. POLITICS AND CORRUPTION | 208 |
| Elections and executives | 210 |
| Legislatures | 225 |
| The judiciary and law enforcement | 234 |
| Other political or public interests | 241 |
| VIII. SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS | 247 |
| Summary | 247 |
| Conclusions | 249 |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY | 257 |

| | |
|---|-----|
| V. HIS BUSINESS, MONOPOLY, AND SPECULATION | 120 |
| Twain's attitude toward speculation and | |
| financial abuses | 122 |
| Twain's connection with three Great Harbors | 123 |
| His own speculation | 124 |
| VI. MINORITY GROUPS | 125 |
| Spanish-Americans | 125 |
| Indians | 126 |
| The Chinese | 127 |
| Hebrews | 128 |
| Negroes | 129 |
| Laborers and the poor | 130 |
| VII. POLITICS AND CORRUPTION | 131 |
| Factions and executives | 131 |
| Legislatures | 132 |
| The judiciary and law enforcement | 134 |
| Other politics or public interests | 134 |
| VIII. SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS | 135 |
| Summary | 135 |
| Conclusions | 136 |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY | 137 |

INTRODUCTION

Mark Twain criticism has undergone several phases since 1900. At first Twain was considered merely a funny man, a genial humorist. Gradually, however, scholars saw, or professed to see, a more serious purpose and deeper thought in Twain's works. Then for several years after 1920 the influence of Van Wyck Brooks led critics to believe Twain a repressed social satirist. In 1932 Bernard DeVoto exploded much of the Brooksian school of thought, and since then criticism has wavered between the Brooks theory of frustrated satire and the DeVoto idea of tragic laughter. A look first at the development of critical attitudes toward Twain and second at the record itself--the writings and life of Mark Twain---should help to establish Mark Twain's social attitudes.

It is the purpose of this study (1) to look at a representative sampling of Mark Twain criticism and see to what extent Twain was considered a social satirist, (2) to look at Twain's own works and determine whether or not he was a social critic, (3) to see how far he carried his social criticism, and (4) to note the purposes for which his social criticism was employed. The latter part of the study has been broken up into several broad phases of Mark Twain's contemporary scene which might have been expected

INTRODUCTION

Mark Twain criticism has undergone several phases since 1900. At first Twain was considered merely a funny man, a genial humorist. Gradually, however, he came to be regarded as a more serious purpose and deeper thought in Twain's works. Then for several years after 1920 the influence of Van Wyck Brooks led critics to believe Twain a repressed social satirist. In 1932 Bernard DeVoto exploded much of the Brooksonian school of thought and since then criticism has returned to the theory of frustrated satire and the DeVoto idea of Twain's laughter. A look first at the development of critical attitudes toward Twain and second at the record itself--his writings and life of Mark Twain--should help to establish Mark Twain's social attitudes.

It is the purpose of this study (1) to look at a representative sampling of Mark Twain criticism and see to what extent Twain was considered a social satirist; (2) to look at Twain's own works and determine whether or not he was a social critic; (3) to see how far he carried his social criticism, and (4) to note the purposes for which his social criticism was employed. The latter part of the study has been broken up into several phases of Twain's contemporary scene which might have been expected

to provoke his criticism: War, Westward Expansion and Imperialism, Monarchy and Progress, Big Business and Speculation, Minority Groups, and Politics and Corruption.

Humor has been interpreted as a quality that appeals to a sense of the ludicrous or absurdly incongruous--the use of laughter chiefly for its own sake.

Social criticism is an evaluation of contemporary mores and movements, involving the approval or disapproval of current moral, political, sociological, and economic trends.

We understand satire as a combination of humor and social criticism used in literature in order to expose vice or folly. Satire can be of two sorts: constructive or destructive. The former attempts to improve society, whereas the latter merely stands aside, laughs scornfully, and though diverting the reader, achieves no worthy purpose.

Originally designed to be a study of Mark Twain's literary treatment of Negro slavery, this thesis grew into its present form during a series of illuminating conferences with Dr. Lucy Lockwood Hazard. Without her invaluable guidance and remarkable patience this study would never have attained completion. Appreciation is also extended to Dr. Dane F. Smith, Dr. Thomas M. Pearce, and Dr. Norton B. Crowell, all of whom offered discerning suggestions.

to provoke his criticism: War, Westward Expansion and Imperialism, Monarchy and Progress, Big Business and Speculation, Minority Groups, and Politics and Corruption. Humor has been interpreted as a quality that appeals to a sense of the ludicrous or absurdly incongruous--the use of laughter chiefly for its own sake.

Social criticism is an evaluation of contemporary mores and movements, involving the approval or disapproval of current moral, political, sociological, and economic trends.

We understand satire as a combination of humor and social criticism used in literature in order to expose vice or folly. Satire can be of two kinds: constructive or destructive. The former attempts to improve society, whereas the latter merely stands aside, laughs scornfully, and through diverting the reader, achieves no worthy purpose. Originally designed to be a study of Mark Twain's literary treatment of Negro slavery, this thesis grew into its present form during a series of illuminating conferences with Dr. Lucy Lockwood Hazard. Without her invaluable guidance and remarkable patience this study would never have attained completion. Appreciation is also extended to Dr. Dana F. Smith, Dr. Thomas M. Foster, and Dr. Norton E. Crowell, all of whom offered illuminating suggestions.

The University of New Mexico Library Staff have courteously made all their facilities available, and the University of California Library Staff gave kind permission for the writer to do research at Berkeley. Mrs. Marion F. Branch, of Austin, and Mr. Robert J. Erhard, of Baltimore, were extremely helpful in furnishing materials from the libraries at the University of Texas and Johns Hopkins University.

The University of Toronto

consequently made it difficult to obtain

University of Toronto

for the purpose of the research

Branch, of Russia, and other

were extremely helpful in

Library of the University of Toronto

University

THE CONTENT

EFFICIENT

EFFICIENT

CHAPTER I

DEVELOPMENT OF MARK TWAIN CRITICISM

An exhaustive study of Mark Twain criticism would, in itself, constitute a complete thesis. A representative sampling of critical attitudes in the three major periods of Twain scholarship, however, is necessary as background to the presentation of specific data revealing Mark Twain's social attitudes. This sampling covers the years before Van Wyck Brooks' Ordeal of Mark Twain, the decade dominated by the influence of Brooks' work, and the period since Bernard DeVoto's Mark Twain's America.

I. BEFORE THE ORDEAL OF MARK TWAIN

Many of the early opinions about Mark Twain came from his close friends. While interesting, these comments often must be somewhat discounted. The comment of Bret Harte, who knew Twain in San Francisco, is extremely interesting, because at an early date Harte saw traces of social satire in Twain. Harte wrote the following for the Springfield, Massachusetts, Daily Republican in 1866:

His humor has more motive than that of Artemus Ward; he is something of a satirist, although his satire is not always subtle or refined. He has shrewdness and

INTRODUCTION

The following is a summary of the work done by the
in itself, consisting of a number of parts, a number of
of their children, a number of their children, a number of
to the possession of a number of their children, a number of
social activities. This number of their children, a number of
Van der Meer, a number of their children, a number of
by the following: a number of their children, a number of

EFFICIENCY EZERASE BOND INVENTION

One of the most important things in life is
from his own life. This is a very important thing
often must be somewhat different. The number of
Hence, the more time the more time, the more time
forever, because a number of their children, a number of
social active in itself. Hence, the more time the more time
Efficiency, a number of their children, a number of
His work has been a number of their children, a number of
the number of their children, a number of their children, a number of
not always and is a number of their children, a number of

a certain hearty abhorrence [sic] of shams which will make his faculty serviceable to mankind.¹

Joel Chandler Harris saw more than a simple fun-making quality in Twain, for he felt that in Twain's works ". . . we are taught the lesson of honesty, justice, and mercy."² In an article in 1896 Twain's close friend, Joseph Twichell, called him a generally genial person, although at times capable of working up a good "hate" toward something or someone.³ Mrs. James T. Fields, in her diary, recalled that Twain raged vehemently in private at voting abuses in 1876, and was thoroughly ashamed of his country.⁴ Another close friend, William Dean Howells, who published My Mark Twain in 1910, placed Twain on the side of labor and the common people. Howells also considered Twain a great humanitarian in addition to being a successful funny man:

He never went so far in socialism as I have gone, if

¹George R. Stewart, "Bret Harte Upon Mark Twain in 1866," American Literature, XIII (November, 1941), 263-64.

²Percy H. Boynton, A History of American Literature (Boston: Ginn and Company, 1919), p. 426.

³Joseph Twichell, "Mark Twain," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XI (May, 1896), 826.

⁴M. A. DeWolfe Howe, "Bret Harte and Mark Twain in the Seventies--Passages from the Diaries of Mrs. James T. Fields," Atlantic Monthly, CXXX (September, 1922), 347. One of the more interesting items in this diary stated that Twain's married life was not completely happy, and that his whole life was one long apology to Olivia Clemens (p. 348). This is extremely interesting in light of later criticism by Van Wyck Brooks, because most of Twain's personal friends thought him happily married.

a certain heavy shadowing (black) over the
make his family responsible to him.

Joel Chandler Harris knew how to tell a story. His
quality is Twain, for he tells the truth in a way
we are taught the lesson of honesty, and we
in an article in 1895 Twain's story of the
called his character "a man of great
capable of working at a good thing, for he
someone, and he was a man of great
that Twain's story was a story of a man
1895, and was thoroughly a story of a man

JOEL CHANDLER HARRIS
JOEL CHANDLER HARRIS
JOEL CHANDLER HARRIS

close friend, Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain in 1895, Twain's story was a story of a man
common people, Twain's story was a story of a man
manifested in Twain's story was a story of a man
he never knew so far as Twain's story was a story of a man

1895, Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man

Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man
Twain's story was a story of a man

he went that way at all, but he was fascinated with Looking Backward and had Bellamy to visit him; and from the first he had a luminous vision of organized labor as the only present help for working-men. He would show that side with such clearness and such force that you could not say anything in hopeful contradiction; he saw with that relentless insight of his that in the Unions was the workman's only present hope of standing up like a man against money and the power of it. There was a time when I was afraid that his eyes were a little holden from the truth; but in the very last talk I heard from him I found that I was wrong, and that this great humorist was as great a humanist as ever.⁵

When we pass from the affectionate tributes of Twain's friends to the impartial estimates in early periodicals, we find two general attitudes. The first group of critics considered Twain merely a humorist, while a second group saw that Twain, despite his reputation as a funny-man, had a serious side.

In the group who considered Twain simply as a humorist, an anonymous critic, in 1901, said that "Mark Twain is first and last and all the time, so far as he is anything, a humorist and nothing more."⁶ The critic then observed that even Twain's humor was becoming stale, and that in a hundred years only "The Jumping Frog" would be remembered.⁷

⁵W. D. Howells, My Mark Twain (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1910), p. 44.

⁶"Chronicle and Comment," The Bookman, XII (January, 1901), 442.

⁷Loc cit.

anonymous critic saw some reforming spirit in Twain, but chiefly considered him a great humorist.⁸ Although in 1893 Frank R. Stockton said, "Mark Twain's most notable characteristic is courage. Few other men--even if the other men could think of such things--would dare to say the things that Mark Twain says,"⁹ Stockton ultimately concluded that Twain's greatest achievement was in the field of humor,¹⁰ and that he was ". . . the Bismarck of humorists."¹¹ Another early periodical article was by Howells, who reviewed A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court.¹² Howells praised the work, and saw some social criticism therein, for he said, ". . . our civilization of to-day sees itself mirrored in the cruel barbarism of the past. . . ."¹³ His final decision, however, was that the book was noteworthy first of all for its humor.¹⁴ Thus one group of

⁸"This Week," Nation, XC (June, 1940), 645-6.

⁹Frank R. Stockton, "Mark Twain and His Recent Works," Forum, XV (August, 1893), 673.

¹⁰Ibid., p. 677.

¹¹Ibid., p. 679.

¹²William Dean Howells, "Editor's Study," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, LXXX (January, 1890), 319-21.

¹³Ibid., p. 320.

¹⁴Ibid., p. 321.

anonymous critics and named prominent specialists, who
chiefly considered him a great man. In 1893 Frank B. Rowland
characteristic is changed. The other side of the
other and could find no other thing. The other side of the
thing that was found. The other side of the thing
cluded that the other side of the thing was the other
of humor. The other side of the thing was the other
late. The other side of the thing was the other
who reviewed. The other side of the thing was the other

EFFICIENCY

ERASE BOND

CONTENT

8. The other side of the thing was the other
9. The other side of the thing was the other
10. The other side of the thing was the other
11. The other side of the thing was the other
12. The other side of the thing was the other
13. The other side of the thing was the other
14. The other side of the thing was the other

reviewers thought Twain largely a humorist, although the group was divided on the evaluation of this humor.

The second portion of early periodical criticism has considerable significance because there has been a prevalent idea that no one saw a serious side to Twain before Van Wyck Brooks in 1920.¹⁵ Actually several critics saw this seriousness, although they did not probe deeply into the question. Laurence Hutton, in a review of Joan of Arc in 1896, said Twain had a serious purpose not known to many readers.¹⁶ In addition, an anonymous English critic, reviewing A Connecticut Yankee in 1890, said, "It is not a novel; it is a ponderous political pamphlet. . . ."¹⁷ He then spoke of Henry George and Edward Bellamy, and their influences on the social-democratic movement in England, and added, "Mark Twain's book is a third contribution in the same direction."¹⁸ In 1910 another anonymous critic

¹⁵ Another type of early Mark Twain criticism has been pointed out by Arthur Lawrence Vogelback, in "The Publication and Reception of Huckleberry Finn in America," American Literature, XII (November, 1939), 260-72. There had been considerable criticism of Twain, but chiefly on moral, not social grounds.

¹⁶ Laurence Hutton, "Literary Notes," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XCIII (June, 1896), 1.

¹⁷ "Mark Twain's New Book, A Satirical Attack on English Institutions," The Review of Reviews, I (February, 1890), 144.

¹⁸ Loc cit.

said, "Mark Twain had always the spirit of the reformer."¹⁹ The writer said George Bernard Shaw considered Twain more of a sociologist than a humorist, and quoted Shaw: "Mark Twain is in much the same position as myself: he has to put matters in such a way as to make people who would otherwise hang him believe he is joking."²⁰ The anonymous author then concluded by mentioning how readers have misunderstood Twain:

They (the people) could understand his swift sorties into literary criticism . . . but they were never quite at home with his savage denunciation of the American policy in the Philippines, of looting missionaries in China, of Leopold's cruelties in the Congo, of Russian barbarities and atrocities. Yet Mark Twain's attitude toward life was nowhere more clearly revealed than in just such indictments. . . .²¹

The attitudes of early literary historians toward Mark Twain can also be divided into two major groups. The first, and larger group, thought Twain a humorist and nothing more. These critics were often unimpressed by his humor. The second group saw traces of satire and social criticism in Twain's writings, but failed to develop this interpretation to any marked degree.

¹⁹"Mark Twain as a Serious Force in Literature," Current Literature, XLVIII (June, 1910), 666.

²⁰Ibid., p. 663..

²¹Ibid., p. 666..

said, "With this, we have the basis of a new
The writer said George Bernard Shaw considered the world
a sociological drama. He said, "The world is a stage,
is in such a position as to be able to see the world
in such a way as to see the world as it really is,
believe he is taking. The writer said that the world
included by mentioning that the world is a stage.

They (the world) would be able to see the world
into literary criticism. . . . The writer said that
at home with the world. The writer said that the world
policy in the world. The writer said that the world
China, of course, is a world. The writer said that the world
separation and separation. The writer said that the world
leave the world. The writer said that the world
just such a world.

The writer said that the world is a stage.
with criticism also be divided into two parts. The
first, and last, and first, and last, and first, and last,
the world. The writer said that the world is a stage.
more. The writer said that the world is a stage.
criticism is the world. The writer said that the world
interpretation is the world. The writer said that the world

12. The writer said that the world is a stage.
Current literature. The writer said that the world is a stage.
1. The writer said that the world is a stage.
2. The writer said that the world is a stage.

In group one Mildred Cabell Watkins treated Twain cursorily in 1894,²² and Huckleberry Finn was not mentioned. It is interesting to note here that although Leon H. Vincent in 1906,²³ and John Erskine in 1910,²⁴ devoted sections of their literary histories to George Bancroft, John Lothrop Motley, Donald Grant Mitchell, William Gilmore Simms, Harriet Beecher Stowe, and Francis Brett Harte, neither one even mentioned Mark Twain. In 1895 Henry A. Beers considered Twain a poor humorist, and nothing else.²⁵ He said Twain was ". . . a western newspaper reporter without any historic imagination."²⁶ In 1898 Henry S. Pancoast also wrote that Twain was merely a not-so-funny humorist.²⁷

There were also those in group one who appreciated Twain's humor. In 1912 William Peterfield Trent and John Erskine (who had ignored Twain two years earlier) considered Twain not only a fine humorist, but also a great and

²²Mildred Cabell Watkins, American Literature (New York: American Book Company, 1894), pp. 204-5.

²³Leon H. Vincent, American Literary Masters (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1906), 518 pp.

²⁴John Erskine, Leading American Novelists (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1910), 301 pp.

²⁵Henry A. Beers, Initial Studies in American Literature (Meadville, Pennsylvania: The Chautauqua-Century Press, 1895), pp. 196-202.

²⁶Ibid., p. 202.

²⁷Henry S. Pancoast, An Introduction to American Literature (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1898), p. 330.

skilled literary novelist.²⁸ They thought Twain could have become an excellent critic of the expanding West, had he attempted the task.²⁹ This is noteworthy as one of the earliest suggestions that Twain did not entirely live up to his potentialities.

In 1912 William Lyon Phelps also called Twain a fine literary artist; although he said nothing about his social criticism, he did point out that Twain was a great democrat who believed in the sacredness of individual rights.³⁰ He also said, "Mark Twain believes in the Present, in human progress,"³¹ an implication, perhaps, that Twain was more a participant than a spectator in the Gilded Age.

No chapter dealing with those men who wrote about Twain would be complete without at least a brief mention of the official biographer, Albert Bigelow Paine. His work, Mark Twain, A Biography, appeared in 1912. Although Paine presented facts in great abundance, he rarely interpreted them. The book, therefore, was not a critical study, but is still valuable because of its tremendous detail.

²⁸William Peterfield Trent and John Erskine, Great American Writers (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1912), pp. 231-50.

²⁹Ibid., p. 236.

³⁰William Lyon Phelps, Essays on Modern Novelists (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1912), p. 102.

³¹Ibid., p. 103.

The second group of early critics saw traces of satire in Twain. In 1909 William Edward Simonds stressed Twain as a humorist, but he did say, "Mr. Clemens was the author also of numerous short stories distinguished by their originality, rather in the vein of the satirist than in that of the mere humorist."³² Reuben Post Halleck went even farther, when in 1911 he spoke of "Mark Twain, philosopher, reformer of the type of Cervantes, and romantic historian. . . ."³³ He said, "While his humor is sometimes mechanical, coarse, and forced, we must not forget that it also often reveals the thoughtful philosopher."³⁴ Halleck's prediction of Twain's future niche was not entirely correct, but it does exemplify the changing attitude toward him: "Mark Twain's future place in literature will probably be due less to humor than to his ability as a philosopher and a historian."³⁵

In 1913 appeared the first penetrating study of Mark Twain when John Macy devoted thirty pages to Clemens in

³²William Edward Simonds, A Student's History of American Literature (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1909), p. 309.

³³Reuben Post Halleck, History of American Literature (New York: American Book Company, 1911), p. 364.

³⁴Ibid., p. 362.

³⁵Loc. cit.

his Spirit of American Literature.³⁶ He was the first writer to make a detailed critical study of Twain. Like many other early critics, Macy had several arguments not wholly acceptable today, but generally his theories were valid and important because he tried to think for himself and present the truth. Part of Macy's importance is his excellent re-evaluation of American writers who had been glossed over by the critics. According to Macy, Twain was a satirist, ". . . a preacher in cap and bells . . ." ³⁷ who ". . . hated the lords of the earth." ³⁸ A ". . . powerful, original thinker," ³⁹ he ". . . looked on the world with a serious, candid and penetrating eye, analyzing the human fool, affectionately tolerant of his folly except when it is mixed with meanness and cruelty." ⁴⁰ Macy continued, "Americans, complaisant and sentimental, do not yet know the power of Mark Twain's Swiftian attacks on our flimsy-minded patriotism and religiosity." ⁴¹ Macy said the medieval Englishmen in A Connecticut Yankee were modern

³⁶ John Macy, The Spirit of American Literature (New York: The Modern Library, 1913), pp. 248-77.

³⁷ Ibid., p. 248.

³⁸ Ibid., p. 263.

³⁹ Ibid., p. 249.

⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 253.

⁴¹ Ibid., p. 269.

Americans, and through these characters much social criticism had been expressed.⁴² Despite this increased awareness of social satire in Twain, which Macy pointed out again when he spoke of Roughing It as an important social study,⁴³ Macy discerningly considered Twain more a social historian than a social critic,⁴⁴ and said, "For his philosophy most readers properly care nothing. They care for his portrait of Mankind. And that is the greatest canvas that any American has painted."⁴⁵ Although Macy's criticism of Twain was not complete and final, he did probe more deeply than the earlier critics, and helped bring about a new spirit in American literary criticism.

Between 1913 and 1920, the period between Macy and Van Wyck Brooks, Twain criticism retained its duality. Some critics persisted in listing Twain among the clowns, whereas others saw his more serious side.

In the first group Roy Bennett Pace called Twain a genial humorist and an idyllic prose writer,⁴⁶ while Leon Kellner thought him "... the king of humorists,"⁴⁷ and

⁴²Ibid., p. 263.

⁴³Ibid., p. 256.

⁴⁴Loc. cit.

⁴⁵Ibid., p. 275.

⁴⁶Roy Bennett Pace, American Literature (Boston: Allyn and Bacon, 1926), p. 262. First published in 1915.

⁴⁷Leon Kellner, American Literature, Julia Franklin, translator (Garden City: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1915), p. 209.

" . . . a merry andrew" ⁴⁸ Walter C. Bronson said Twain's non-western works contained some satire in which the thinking was shallow, ⁴⁹ but thought Twain's great achievement was the depiction of the American West:

These books constitute his distinctive contribution to literature. He himself would have scornfully rejected this view, for he prided himself most on his ability as a satirist and radical philosopher; but the verdict of time will be that he could see and describe far better than he could think, and that even his humor is less valuable than his work as a painter of American life in the Mississippi Valley in days that have passed away forever. ⁵⁰

Stuart P. Sherman was, to a certain extent, in both groups. He called Twain one of the "divine average," ⁵¹ and added, ". . . nothing is holier to him than a joke." ⁵² Sherman, however, did see some seriousness in Twain, and emphasized his democratic spirit by saying, ". . . he was of the

⁴⁸Ibid., p. 201.

⁴⁹Walter C. Bronson, A Short History of American Literature (Boston: D. C. Heath and Company, 1919), p. 290.

⁵⁰Loc cit.

⁵¹Stuart P. Sherman, On Contemporary Literature (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1917), p. 36.

⁵²Ibid., p. 37.

people and for the people at all times."⁵³

Three writers, Percy Boynton, Edith Wyatt, and Waldo Frank fall into the second group who saw a more serious Mark Twain. Boynton thought Twain a satirist who ". . . upheld the simple virtues . . ."⁵⁴ and compared him with his own creation, Colonel Sellers.⁵⁵ Boynton believed Twain's thinking was dual in nature, combining some originality with some echoes of the spirit of the times.⁵⁶ In 1917 Edith Wyatt, shifting from the more common critical attitudes, called Twain a great social critic, and said his criticisms were numerous, far-sighted, penetrating, and courageous.⁵⁷

⁵³Ibid., p. 41. Sherman, in his article on Twain in the Cambridge History of American Literature (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1921), III, 1-20, brought out even more emphatically this idea of Twain's democratic spirit. He thought (p. 2) Twain incarnated the spirit of the time, and was ". . . permeated to the marrow of his bones with the sentiment of democratic society and with loyalty to American institutions." Sherman did not deny all satire in Twain, but thought his occasional satire was directed principally at monarchical governments and institutions.

⁵⁴Percy H. Boynton, A History of American Literature (Boston: Ginn and Company, 1919), p. 392.

⁵⁵Ibid., p. 384..

⁵⁶Ibid., p. 390..

⁵⁷Edith Wyatt, "An Inspired Critic," North American Review, CCV (April, 1917), 603-4. Miss Wyatt's evidence, however, does not seem to bear out her conclusions. As an example of Twain's "unabated" social criticism, she referred (p. 605) to his criticism of some farmers near Buffalo who had attacked a couple.

The most important of these three critics was Waldo Frank, who in certain aspects anticipated the Brooksonian theory.⁵⁸ He did not consider the effects of family or genteel friends on Twain, but like Brooks, thought Twain's life a tragedy and spoke of ". . . the bitter wreckage in his long career."⁵⁹ Twain was a balked satirist, for ". . . underneath the gibes and antics of the professional jester, brooded the hatred and resentment of a tortured child."⁶⁰ In his conscious mind Twain accepted contemporary standards, but the repression of inner talents led to his ultimate defeat:

The generic Clemens was a tender and dreaming and avid spirit, in love with beauty, in love with love. But he was born in the ranks of a hurling and sweating army. He forced himself to move with it at its own pace. He forced himself to take on its measure of success; to take on that distrust of life and love which so well defended the principal business of its march. For this betrayal of his soul, his soul brought him bitterness, and the mass of his works are failures.⁶¹

II. BROOKS AND HIS DECADE

Mark Twain criticism reached maturity in 1920 when Van Wyck Brooks published his first edition of The Ordeal

⁵⁸Waldo Frank, Our America (New York: Boni and Liveright, 1919), 232 pp.

⁵⁹Ibid., p. 38.

⁶⁰Ibid., p. 40.

⁶¹Ibid., p. 44.

of Mark Twain. His lengthy study, admittedly not a conventional biography, was a startling interpretation of Mark Twain's personality. Using psychoanalysis to study a writer, Brooks probed to new and unknown depths in Twain, and presented an over-all picture different from any previous interpretation. Many critics before Brooks saw Twain's satire, but often their criticisms were obtuse and failed to point out the significance of it in Twain. Brooks saw the significance and explained it according to two theories: Freudian psychoanalysis and the belief that America's long-needed native literature had been suppressed by the combination of Gilded Age and genteel tradition.

A summary of Brooks' idea is found in this oft-quoted passage from The Ordeal of Mark Twain:

That bitterness of his was the effect of a certain miscarriage in his creative life, a balked personality, an arrested development of which he was himself almost wholly unaware, but which for him destroyed the meaning of life.⁶²

According to Brooks, Twain was a frustrated and repressed satirist.⁶³ First his mother, Jane Clemens, repressed Twain

⁶²Van Wyck Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1920), p. 14. All quotations from this book in this thesis are from the 1920 edition.

⁶³Ibid., p. 125.

by forcing him into the narrow and non-creative path of Calvinism.⁶⁴ Instead of growing up normally, he was filled with inhibitions. He showed a certain moral disintegration when he went west, and pioneer life helped repress his natural artistic spirit.⁶⁵ Twain also surrendered when he married Olivia Langdon. She, according to Brooks, not only urged him to earn large sums of money, and thus further repressed his artistic spirit,⁶⁶ but also ruined his literature by making him defer to her genteel taste.⁶⁷ The final harmful influence was William Dean Howells, Twain's literary confessor. Twain submitted his manuscripts to Howells for additional censorship, and Howells, along with Mrs. Clemens, continually toned down Twain's literary works.⁶⁷

As a result of all these disastrous pressures, Twain failed to live up to his tremendous possibilities. Instead of writing deep and biting satire, he appealed only to rudimentary minds.⁶⁹ There is some satire in Twain, but it is chiefly in the privacy of his letters.⁷⁰ It is usually

⁶⁴Ibid., p. 33.

⁶⁵Ibid., p. 78.

⁶⁶Ibid., p. 113.

⁶⁷Ibid., p. 120.

⁶⁸Ibid., p. 119.

⁶⁹Ibid., p. 15.

⁷⁰Ibid., p. 207.

by forcing his hand, the master and non-resistance of
Calvinism. In contrast to asserting its morality, he was filled
with inhibitions. He showed a certain moral distinction
when he went west, and wherever this moral distinction
was artistic spirit. He also understood when he was
told Olivia Langdon. She, according to Brown, not only
urged him to even larger work of money, and that further pro-
gressed his artistic spirit, but also raised his literary
by making him refer to her personal taste. The final factor
in his influence was William Dean Howells, Henry's literary
confessor. Howells admitted his own debts to Howells for
additional encouragement, and possibly, along with Mrs. Olcott,
constantly urged him to literary work.
The results of his literary education, however, failed
to live up to his tremendous possibilities. Instead
of writing deep and stirring works, he remained only to
rudimentary study. There is some reason to believe, and it
is chiefly in the privacy of his letters, it is usually

40 Ibid., p. 121.

41 Ibid., p. 121.

42 Ibid., p. 121.

43 Ibid., p. 120.

44 Ibid., p. 121.

45 Ibid., p. 121.

46 Ibid., p. 120.

made public only when opinion is largely with him,⁷¹ and according to Brooks it is not profound: "One would say that Mark Twain had never thought at all."⁷² Brooks concluded, "He was the supreme victim of an epoch in American history [the genteel tradition], an epoch that has closed."⁷³

It was only natural that these startling ideas would evoke considerable response from literary critics. In a few years many men adopted the Brooksian viewpoint, but at first the critics moved cautiously in evaluating this novel theory. The book reviews of The Ordeal of Mark Twain serve as excellent illustrations of this caution.

Although William Lyon Phelps, in his review, thought The Ordeal of Mark Twain challenging and informative, he did not wholly accept the thesis.⁷⁴ He agreed that Twain never lived up to his potentialities, but did not consider Twain's mother, wife, and Howells' harmful influences.⁷⁵ According to Phelps, Brooks failed in the long run because he tried

⁷¹Ibid., p. 241.

⁷²Ibid., p. 152.

⁷³Ibid., p. 267.

⁷⁴William Lyon Phelps, "Mark Twain Chief of Sinners," The New York Times Book Review and Magazine (June 27, 1920), 1-2.

made public only when opinion is largely with him, and according to Brooks it is not probable that would say that Mark Twain has never thought of all. "He was the supreme victim of an epoch in American history [the genteel tradition], an epoch that has closed." It was only natural that these distinguished men would evoke considerable responses from literary critics. In the years many men adopted the Brooksian viewpoint, but at first the critics moved cautiously in evaluating this novel theory. The book reviews of *The Gilded Age* of Mark Twain serve as excellent illustrations of this caution. First, William Lyon Phelps, in his review, thought the *Gilded Age* of Mark Twain a masterpiece of information, he did not wholly accept the thesis. He agreed that Twain never lived up to his potentialities, but did not consider Twain's mother, wife, and how his family influenced his personality. Brooks, looking in the long run, perhaps he cited

Twain, p. 267.
Twain, p. 132.
Twain, p. 267.

The New York Times Book Review and *Mark Twain* (New York: 1920).
1-2.

the impossible--fitting a man to a theory.⁷⁶ Phelps concluded that Twain was a great artist rather than a great thinker, and that Brooks' study of Twain would warn youths not to misuse their talents.⁷⁷

Another reviewer who did not wholly accept the Brooksonian idea was Alvin Johnson.⁷⁸ He admitted that "There can be no disputing the fact that Mark Twain's environment was largely responsible for his deviation from what he felt to be the line of artistic duty."⁷⁹ Johnson also saw traces of genius in Twain, but did not feel that he had produced many artistic successes.⁸⁰ Shifting away from Brooks, Johnson warned, ". . . it is a treacherous business for a critic devoid of a sense of humor to hold an incorrigible humorist too strictly to account."⁸¹ This attitude, somewhat akin to the later DeVoto criticism, was developed further by Johnson:

⁷⁶Loc. cit.

⁷⁷Loc. cit.

⁷⁸Alvin Johnson, "The Tragedy of Mark Twain," The New Republic, XXIII (July, 1920), 201-3.

⁷⁹Ibid., p. 202..

⁸⁰Ibid., p. 201..

⁸¹Ibid., p. 203..

the impossible--fitting a man to a theory. The idea con-
cluded that Twain was a great artist rather than a great
thinker, and that his "study of Twain" would be a study
not to miss their talents.

Another reviewer who did not wholly accept the Twain-
ian idea was Alvin Johnson. He admitted that Twain can be
no disputing the fact that Mark Twain's environment was
largely responsible for his development from what he felt to
be the line of artistic duty. Johnson also saw Twain
of genius in Twain, but did not feel that he had produced
many artistic successes. He said, "Twain was a man who
was turned, . . . it is a tremendous burden for a writer
devoted to a sense of humor to hold an inconceivable burden
too strictly to account." This attitude, however, which is
the later Devoe criticism, was developed further by Johnson.

76 loc. cit.

77 loc. cit.

78 Alvin Johnson, "The Tragedy of Mark Twain," *New Republic*, XLIII (July 1920), 201-2.

79 Ibid., p. 202.

80 Ibid., p. 201.

81 Ibid., p. 202.

Mark Twain was not in revolt against American institutions; therefore he could not have made of himself a satirist according to Van Wyck Brooks's taste. Mark Twain was essentially a pioneer, with his character formed under pioneer discipline or indiscipline.⁸²

Johnson's final decision was that Twain had no desire to be either a satirist or a humorist, but merely wanted to show mankind the truth about itself.⁸³

An anonymous reviewer in The Literary Digest summarized various English opinions of The Ordeal of Mark Twain, and the attitudes were about evenly divided between adoption and rejection of the Brooksian thesis.⁸⁴ Another reviewer, Richard Burton, who evidently had known Twain personally, added little worth-while opinion.⁸⁵ Somewhat distressed at Brooks' references to Twain's wife, Burton admitted that Brooks was readable but not accurate.⁸⁶ Burton believed Twain was unrepressed, was a great humorist, a great moralist, and a great satirist.⁸⁷ He concluded with a statement that seemed more eulogistic than critical: "The out-

⁸²Loc. cit.

⁸³Loc. cit.

⁸⁴"Taming Mark Twain," The Literary Digest, LXVII (November 13, 1920), 34.

⁸⁵Richard Burton, "The Mystery of Personality," The Bookman, LII (January, 1921), 333-37.

⁸⁶Ibid., p. 334.

⁸⁷Loc. cit.

spoken deliverance of his views, however unpopular, was a chief characteristic of the man, and made him the reformer he was."⁸⁸ "Whitewashing Jane Clemens," an even more outspoken denial of one part of the Brooksonian thesis, was published several years later by Doris and Samuel Webster.⁸⁹ Twain's mother was portrayed as a non-Puritanical frontier woman, who possessed many of the traits later seen in her son. According to this portrait, it would have been almost impossible for Jane Clemens to have repressed young Sam. The Websters concluded, "Van Wyck Brooks's mistake is that he has sketched a consistent character. . . ."⁹⁰ whereas they depicted Mrs. Clemens, like her son, as a mass of inconsistencies.

Undoubtedly the best dissenting review was by Samuel McChord Crothers in 1920.⁹¹ Beginning with the

⁸⁸Ibid., p. 336.

⁸⁹Doris Webster and Samuel Webster, "Whitewashing Jane Clemens," The Bookman, LXI (July, 1925), 531-35.

⁹⁰Ibid., p. 531.

⁹¹Samuel McChord Crothers, "The Hibernation of Genius," The Dame School of Experience and Other Papers (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1920), pp. 214-231. While evidently first published here in a volume of essays, the article, appearing within a few months of The Ordeal of Mark Twain, can be considered in this section with the other book reviews. It should also be noted that the mild debunking by Crothers is much more effective than the later raging blasts by DeVoto. Satire is often better with a gentle touch, and DeVoto, like the man he defended, possibly attempted to beat all opposition to a pulp with a blunt club.

spoken deliverance of his views, however unpopular, was a chief characteristic of the man, and made him the reformer he was.⁶⁸ "Whittierism," Jane Clemens, "an even more outspoken denial of one part of the Whittier thesis, was published several years later by Davis and Samuel Webster.⁶⁹ Twain's another was portrayed as a non-Whittierian literary woman, who possessed many of the traits later seen in her son. According to this portrait, it would have been almost impossible for Jane Clemens to have represented young Sam. The Webster concluded, "Van Wyck Brooks's mistake is that he has sketched a consistent character."⁷⁰ whereas they depicted Mr. Clemens, like her son, as a man of inconsistent.

Undoubtedly the most interesting review was by Samuel McChord Crothers in 1907.⁷¹ Beginning with the

⁶⁸ Ibid., p. 330.

⁶⁹ Davis Webster and Samuel Webster, "Whittierism," Jane Clemens, "The Bookman," LXI (July, 1925), 231-22.

⁷⁰ Ibid., p. 231.

⁷¹ Samuel McChord Crothers, "The Whittierism of Genius," The Book School of Experience and Other Essays (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1907), pp. 211-231. While originally first published here in a volume of essays, the article, appearing within a few months of the School of Mark Twain, can be considered in this connection with the other book reviews. It should also be noted that the mild depreciation by Crothers is much more effective than the later review by Davis, which is often better with a gentle scorn, and Davis, like the man he defended, possibly attempted to beat all opposition for pulp with a blunt club.

reminder that people often tend to blame society for thwarting geniuses,⁹² Crothers, in an unacademic but thoroughly delightful manner, opposed the Brooksonian idea that Twain was a natural and serious artistic genius.⁹³ Crothers disagreed with the various frustration and repression theories,⁹⁴ and refused to grieve because of what Twain did not write.⁹⁵ According to Crothers, a genius should be

⁹²Ibid., p. 216: "Society by taking thought might develop a sufficient number of geniuses of the first class. Instead of doing this it concerns itself chiefly with the education of a vast host of mediocrities. For this it is much to blame. When now and then a genius happens to be born, he ought to assert himself and make known his wants. Society should be alert to render first aid."

⁹³Ibid., pp. 216-17: "The author starts with the assumption that Mark Twain was a heaven-born genius dowered with all the gifts of the gods. He had it in him to produce a great work of literary art whose austere beauty would be the delight of the discerning and the despair of the vulgar."

⁹⁴Ibid., pp. 217-21. "The intimations (p. 217) in regard to his early life seem scanty, but one sinister fact is discovered. In his early years the maternal influence was strong." . . . "Of course (pp. 218-19) the boy had not expressed, so far as we are told, any desire to be an artist, and if he had his mother would probably have expressed no objection; an artist being a man who took daguerreotypes. This was a respectable and sufficiently lucrative business in Hannibal. But it is the Freudian wish which we are dealing with, and it is all the more fateful when it is unexpressed." . . . "Hannibal, Missouri, (p. 221) Virginia City, Nevada, and Elmira, New York, all exerted a malign influence on Mark Twain's genius, while we are made aware of a deadly chill emanating from the literary purlieus of Boston."

⁹⁵Ibid., p. 222. "The career of Mark Twain as thus told seems singularly lacking in any attempt at self-realization. After the age of twelve there seems to have been 'nothing doing.' When duty whispered low, 'Go write the great interpretation of American life,' the youth did not even say, 'I cannot.' He only absentmindedly went and did something else. . . . The life-story is one to make the judicious grieve."

reminded that people often tend to blame society for
their own failures. One writer, in an interesting
essay, delightedly pointed out the irony of the
fact that a natural and a true artist is
displeased with the various limitations and
obstacles, and refused to make any of them
his own. According to this writer, a writer should be

developed a sufficient number of qualities to be able to
instead of doing this, it is necessary to find out
education of a vast body of material. The writer
much to blame. How can a writer be blamed for
born, he ought to accept it. The writer should be able to

the writer. The writer should be able to
with all the gifts of the gods. The writer should be able to
do a great work of literature. The writer should be able to
would be the delight of the reader and the writer.

regard to his early life. The writer should be able to
it discovered. In his early years, the writer should be able to
was strong. The writer should be able to
expressed, so far as we are concerned, the writer should be able to
list, and it is not the writer's responsibility to be concerned
no objection to the writer's early life. The writer should be able to
This was a respectable and intelligent person. The writer should be able to
in himself. But it is not the writer's responsibility to be concerned
ing with, and it is not the writer's responsibility to be concerned
pressed. The writer should be able to
Novels, and other. The writer should be able to
on the writer's early life. The writer should be able to
will examine the writer's early life. The writer should be able to

also. The writer should be able to
I cannot. The writer should be able to
interpretation of the writer's early life. The writer should be able to
the writer's early life. The writer should be able to
tion. After the age of twenty, the writer should be able to
the writer's early life. The writer should be able to
the writer's early life. The writer should be able to

judged by what he actually produced.⁹⁶ Crothers then stated his major opposition to the Brooksian theory:

We do not call that degree of artistic ability that can be so easily turned aside from its course by the name of genius. Genius must stand a quantitative as well as a qualitative test. It must not only be something good in kind, but there must be a great deal of it--in fact so much of it as to be irrepressible.⁹⁷

His concluding point was that Twain's one great endowment was an abundance of natural humor:

Grant that Mark Twain's genius was essentially humorous and his career becomes intelligible. I find it very much easier to think of him as a great humorist who succeeded rather than as a great artist who failed.⁹⁸

Thus at first the reviewers did not wholly accept Brooks' theory. It is interesting, however, to look at Lewis Mumford's review of the revised 1933 edition of The Ordeal.⁹⁹ Thoroughly pro-Brooks, Mumford said Brooks made a painful but necessary contribution to our understanding of Twain.¹⁰⁰ Mumford took an attitude entirely antithetical to Burton's, mentioned previously, and said:

⁹⁶Ibid., p. 227.

⁹⁷Ibid., p. 223.

⁹⁸Ibid., p. 225.

⁹⁹Lewis Mumford, "Prophet, Pedant and Pioneer," The Saturday Review of Literature, IX (May 6, 1933), 573-5.

¹⁰⁰Ibid., p. 574.

Not merely as a writer but as a man Mark Twain seems a small, spoiled effigy of the person he might have been. He hates the shams and hypocrisies of our society, but when he attacks them he usually pulls his punches: he dislikes the tame conventions of his Victorian contemporaries, but when he challenges them, he does so in secret, like a little boy writing a dirty word on the back of a fence.¹⁰¹

Between 1920 and 1932 Mark Twain criticism was in general a reaction to or adoption of the Brooksonian thesis, and fell into three broad groups. Some critics reverted to pre-Brooksonian interpretations; others accepted parts of the Brooksonian thesis; while the third group followed Brooks implicitly.

Several well-known scholars were among the first group. Bliss Perry, writing the literary volume for The Chronicles of America Series in 1920, treated Twain perfunctorily. Perry did mention that Twain attacked injustices, but he considered him predominantly a western humorist and writer of romances.¹⁰² George Edward Woodberry wrote three volumes that appeared a year later, but only once mentioned Twain, and then as a mere funny man.¹⁰³ In 1923 John Louis

¹⁰¹Ibid., p. 573.

¹⁰²Bliss Perry, The American Spirit in Literature (vol. XXXIV, Allen Johnson, Editor, The Chronicles of America Series, 50 vols.; New Haven: Yale University Press, 1918-1921), pp. 236-40.

¹⁰³George Edward Woodberry, Appreciation of Literature and America in Literature (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921), p. 206.

Haney considered Twain principally a funny man, but saw some social satire in The Prince and the Pauper.¹⁰⁴ A much later writer who, in part, reverted to the older ideas about Twain was Constance Rourke. According to her theory, Twain was predominantly a writer of burlesques:

It is a mistake to look for the social critic--even manque--in Mark Twain. In a sense the whole American comic tradition has been that of social criticism: but this had been instinctive and incomplete, and so it proved to be in Mark Twain. Like the earlier humorists he was rich in notation; from Roughing It to The Gilded Age he contrived to enclose the color of a period with a thousand details of manner, ambition, lingo. But as he turned toward the inclusive or penetrative view he was invariably blocked by some preposterous extravagance that seemed to mount visibly before his eyes.¹⁰⁵

Some of the critics who reverted to pre-Brooksian interpretations, notably Gamaliel Bradford and William B. Cairns, disparaged Twain. Bradford's comments were nearly all adverse, but were often enlightening.¹⁰⁶ He said Twain was an occasional social critic, but his thinking never went ". . . to the bottom of things."¹⁰⁷ There was an

¹⁰⁴John Louis Haney, The Story of our Literature (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1923), p. 202.

¹⁰⁵Constance Rourke, American Humor, A Study of the National Character (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1931), p. 104. An extremely interesting aspect of Rourke's theory is its anticipation, by a year, of the DeVoto idea of Twain as a frontier humorist who created art from the tall tale.

¹⁰⁶Gamaliel Bradford, American Portraits 1875-1900 (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1936), 249 pp.

¹⁰⁷Ibid., p. 18.

Harney considered this... social reform in the United States... writer who, in fact, revealed to the world... was considered honest... predominantly a writer of the...

It is a mistake to... even though... American people... criticism... complete... the earlier... foundation... the color of a... manner... inclusive of... by some... visible before his...

Some of the... interpretations... certain... all... was an occasional... vent...

107 John... New York...

108... National... theory is... of Twain as a... fall...

109... Boston and New York...

" . . . absence of steady thinking on any subject . . ." ¹⁰⁸
 by Twain, and he busied himself with effects rather than
 causes. ¹⁰⁹ In short, according to Bradford, Twain was
 brilliant at times, but shallow. ¹¹⁰ Cairns thought Twain
 had been highly overrated, and in a few pages developed the
 theory that Twain, at first a mere newspaper joker who was
 gradually hailed by the people as a philosopher, " . . .
 undertook to express opinions on a variety of subjects
 ranging from foreign missions to politics. . . ." Cairns
 concluded that most of Twain's consciously serious work had
 no permanency in literature. ¹¹²

Most Twain criticism between 1920 and 1932 was in
 partial agreement with Brooks. Using the Brooksonian thesis
 as a starting point, most of the critics developed their
 own ideas in slightly different ways. William Lyon Phelps,
 who had several years earlier written of Twain as a humorist,
 now agreed that Twain had been forced into humor by other
 people against his will. ¹¹³ Phelps, however, saw a

¹⁰⁹Ibid., p. 13.

¹¹⁰Loc. cit.

¹¹¹William B. Cairns, A History of American Literature (New York: Oxford University Press, 1930), p. 451.

¹¹²Ibid., p. 452.

¹¹³William Lyon Phelps, Some Makers of American Literature (Boston: Marshall Jones Company, 1923), p. 169.

... absence of steady criticism of my work...
by Twain, and he quoted almost every word of his
causes. 109 In fact, according to Twain, Twain was
brilliant at once, but shallow.
had been highly overrated, and in a way that was
theory that Twain, at first a mere newspaper reporter,
gradually belied by the people as a philosopher.
undertook to express himself on a variety of subjects
ranging from foreign relations to politics. 110
concluded that most of Twain's conclusions were not
no parsimony in literature. 111
Most Twain criticism has been a
partial agreement with Twain. 112
as a starting point, most of the criticism has been
own ideas in almost all cases. 113
who had several years earlier written of Twain as a
now agreed that Twain had been a great man. 114
people against his will. 115

109 Ibid., p. 11.

110 Ibid., p. 11.

111 William B. Ewald, "A History of Twain's
Literature (New York: Oxford University Press, 1964), p. 11.

112 Ibid., p. 11.

113 William B. Ewald, "A History of Twain's
Literature (New York: Oxford University Press, 1964), p. 11.

" . . . fierce passion for Improvement . . ." in Twain which had not been completely repressed.¹¹⁴ Phelps quoted an anonymous German critic who considered Twain a great social critic, and said, " . . . he has as his true goal something higher and nobler [tham wit], the determination to bring to the attention of mankind evil customs and alterable obstacles, in order that human beings may become better and nobler."¹¹⁵ In 1927 Lucy Lockwood Hazard followed part of the Brooksian thesis.¹¹⁶ She, however, discounted the importance of pressure on Twain from the women in his family, and believed the real pressure came from " . . . the larger social group whose standards, motives, and activities made up the Zeitgeist of the sensational seventies. . . ."¹¹⁷ Of the two types of life on the frontier, conquering the wilderness and the later exploiting the land, Twain fell into the latter type. He " . . . was himself a product of the Gilded Age, like Hawthorne impotently critical of the forces which had entered into the very fiber of his being."¹¹⁸

¹¹⁴Ibid., p. 186.. Twelve years later Phelps, in "Mark Twain," The Yale Review, XXIX (December, 1935), 291-310, continued to hold the older attitude that Twain was, above all else, a great humorist and literary artist.

¹¹⁵Loc. cit.

¹¹⁶Lucy Lockwood Hazard, The Frontier in American Literature (New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1927), pp. 220-30.

¹¹⁷Ibid., p. 221..

¹¹⁸Loc. cit.

"... fierce reaction has been provoked."

had not been completely reversed.

anonymous letter written to the author.

critical, and said, "I have not read it."

higher and nobler [than] the other [one].

to the attention of the author and his friends.

studies, in order that the author might be able to

reply. In 1907, the author looked forward to

the publication of his book, but it was not

possible to produce on this point in the

and believed the real situation was that

social group should be studied, and not

up the [?] of the [?]

of the [?] of the [?]

withness and the [?] of the [?]

into the [?] of the [?]

the [?] of the [?]

forces which had entered into the [?]

"Mark Twain," the [?]

310, continued to hold the [?]

above all else, a great [?]

118 loc. cit.

119 loc. cit.

120 loc. cit.

121 loc. cit.

She concluded:

Not blind enough to be the idolater of the Gilded Age, not brave enough to be its iconoclast, Mark Twain evolves this ingenious compromise. He portrays the Gilded Age as a spectacle for scornful laughter.¹¹⁹

Ernest Erwin Leisy was another writer who accepted only part of the Brooksonian theory.¹²⁰ He admitted the split personality in Twain, and believed that Twain's social criticism was submerged beneath his narrative writing,¹²¹ but he attacked the frustration idea:

Mark Twain married an estimable woman of New England stock to whose censorship of his work he readily deferred; she, with the aid of Howells and others, turned him from hoaxes and burlesque autobiographies to the fields where his true talents lay.¹²²

Carl Van Doren also accepted part of Brooks' theory--the idea that Twain had a split personality, and that the desire ". . . to satirize was only a part of his mental constitution. . . ."123

The third group of critics between 1920 and 1932

¹¹⁹Ibid., p. 230.. This idea is extremely interesting as an anticipation, in part, of the later tragic laughter theory propounded by DeWoto.

¹²⁰Ernest Erwin Leisy, American Literature, an Interpretative Survey (New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1929), pp. 170-79.

¹²¹Ibid., pp. 178-79.

¹²²Ibid., p. 172.

¹²³Carl Van Doren, "Mark Twain," Dictionary of American Biography, Allen Johnson and Dumas Malone, editors (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1930), IV, 194.

The conclusion:

Not blind enough to be the victim of the same error
not brave enough to be a lionhearted. This is the
this is the error of the past. The error of the past
as a specialist for the future.

Ernest Rabinowitz was a young man who was
part of the Brooklyn Museum. He was a young man who
specially in the field of the museum. He was a young man
who was a specialist in the field of the museum. He was a
he attacked the museum in the field of the museum.

With this in mind, an attempt was made to
stock to which was the result of the error of the past.
The error of the past was the result of the error of the past.
The error of the past was the result of the error of the past.
The error of the past was the result of the error of the past.

Carl von Dönnitz was a young man who was
also that was the result of the error of the past.
also that was the result of the error of the past.
also that was the result of the error of the past.
also that was the result of the error of the past.

The third error of the past was the error of the past.

1101. The error of the past was the error of the past.
as an indication of the error of the past.
theory proposed by the error of the past.

1201. The error of the past was the error of the past.
Interpretative error of the error of the past.
1929, pp. 170-171.

121. The error of the past was the error of the past.
122. The error of the past was the error of the past.

123. The error of the past was the error of the past.
124. The error of the past was the error of the past.
125. The error of the past was the error of the past.

adopted the major points made originally by Brooks. The Ordeal of Mark Twain had gradually become rather widely accepted, and in the few years before 1932 many critics echoed the Brooksonian thesis. Lewis Mumford did not mention the Brooksonian theory that Twain was repressed by his own family and by Howells, but he did follow Brooks in other respects and said Twain outwardly gloried in exploitation, but inwardly his soul rebelled against it.¹²⁴ He made the significant point that Twain was chiefly interested in his own comfort at all times, and thus never antagonized society or jeopardized his own secure position with prolonged satirical criticism.¹²⁵ Vernon Louis Parrington, who in Main Currents in American Thought said that Twain had a divided self of artist and wealth-seeker, agreed that he succumbed to the pressure of his environment¹²⁶ and was a satirist who did not live up to his ability after writing The Gilded Age:

He had opened another door to his genius and discovered the satirist. There lay the real Mark Twain.

¹²⁴Lewis Mumford, The Golden Day (New York: Horace Liveright, Inc., 1926), p. 172.

¹²⁵Ibid., p. 173..

¹²⁶Vernon Louis Parrington, Main Currents in American Thought (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1930), III, 88.

But the wares of the satirist were not in demand at the barbecue, so he closed the door and fell to purveying what the public wanted.¹²⁷

Parrington thought Twain reflected his times more than he criticized them,¹²⁸ but believed that Twain did tend more toward social criticism in his later years:

He was no longer a good Federalist-Whig concerned about exploitation and the safeguards of property. Although he voted the Republican ticket, he made merry over the tariff and frankly hated the dominant Republican property-consciousness. Like Lincoln he was for the man rather than the dollar when the rights of the two clashed. In these later years he was steadily drifting to the left, on the side of the social underling, sympathetic with those who do the work of the world.¹²⁹

Russell Blankenship echoed Brooks and Parrington in the belief that Twain's genius was for social satire, that he was repressed by the acquisitive spirit of the Gilded Age, and that he finally took the easy way out:

Mark Twain was formed on the frontier into a social satirist of rare abilities for whom there was an urgent need in the seventies and eighties, but the age did not enjoy criticism so well as it liked humor, and under the urging of family and friends he became the popular and highly paid humorist of the day.¹³⁰

¹²⁷Ibid., p. 94.

¹²⁸Ibid., p. 85.

¹²⁹Ibid., p. 99. This idea may represent wishful thinking on Parrington's part, since he is prone to attribute to any writer whom he likes a strong sense of social consciousness. A later section of this thesis will attempt to show whether Parrington's generalization is borne out by any evidence of increasing social criticism in Twain's work.

¹³⁰Russell Blankenship, American Literature As An Expression of the National Mind (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1931), p. 457.

But the water of the harbor was not so clear as
the harbor, so he closed the door and left to
voicing what the public wanted.

Partisan thought was reflected in the way they
criticized them, but believed that they were
forward social criticism in the same way.

He was no longer a good friend of the common man
exploitation and the selfishness of the common man
he voted the Republican ticket in 1896 and in 1900
tariff and financial reform. His financial reform
tyranny. His financial reform. His financial reform.
than the dollar when the dollar was at its peak.
these later years he was a strong supporter of the
on the side of the common man, the common man
those who do the work of the world.

Russell Blankenship, a writer and editor in the
that that was the only way to get the common man
represented by the common man.

that he finally found the way to get the common man
BAS CONTENT

Mark Twain was a great writer and a great editor
satirist of the common man. He was a great writer
used in the common man and the common man.
enjoy criticism as well as the common man.
writing of the common man and the common man.
highly paid himself at the time.

127144, p. 41.

127144, p. 42.

127144, p. 43. This is a very interesting article
thinking on the common man. It is a very interesting
see to any writer who is a common man.
connection. It is a very interesting article.
to show whether the common man is a common man.
any evidence of the common man's common man.

127144, p. 44. This is a very interesting article
Expression of the National Spirit (New York: The
Company, 1932).

C. Hartley Grattan also followed the Brooksonian theory that censorship by both Twain's wife and Howells was a harmful influence, and that Twain was not strong enough to resist the acquisitive spirit of the Gilded Age.¹³¹ Grattan felt, however, that Twain's social criticism had not been entirely repressed, because The Gilded Age ". . . hit hard at what he hated in American life,"¹³² and Huckleberry Finn contained many passages of serious criticism.¹³³ A final critic to echo Brooks was Grant C. Knight, who depicted Twain as repressed and frustrated.¹³⁴ According to Knight, Twain's major achievement was as a chronicler of social history.¹³⁵

III. CRITICISM SINCE MARK TWAIN'S AMERICA

In the preceding pages it has become evident that the new critical attitude toward Twain, first developed by Van Wyck Brooks, gradually spread and eventually was accepted by most scholars. In 1932 Bernard DeVoto, however,

¹³¹C. Hartley Grattan, "Mark Twain," American Writers on American Literature, John Macy, editor (New York: Horace Liveright, Inc., 1931), p. 277.

¹³²Ibid., p. 278.

¹³³Ibid., p. 282.

¹³⁴Grant C. Knight, American Literature and Culture (New York: Ray Long and Richard R. Smith, Inc., 1932), p. 361.

¹³⁵Ibid., p. 363.

C. Harvey... with...

that... by...

the... and...

the... of...

however, that...

repressed, because...

he hated in...

many passages of...

echo... was...

pressed and...

actor... of...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

the...

threw into the field a literary bombshell: Mark Twain's America.¹³⁶ As important a book as The Ordeal of Mark Twain, it attacked much of the Brooksonian theory. DeVoto did not believe the frontier was a Puritanical or repressing environment,¹³⁷ did not think Twain's mother was a harmful influence,¹³⁸ believed the frontier was not barren of folklore as Brooks had claimed,¹³⁹ and felt sure that Twain's early life proved conclusively that he was "... a humorist before anything else."¹⁴⁰ DeVoto admitted that the conflict of frontier spirit and genteel tradition did not always help Twain's art, but he also believed that this combination was often beneficial.¹⁴¹ According to DeVoto, Twain did occasionally act as a social satirist. In San Francisco, "The purposeful satirist develops somewhat: social reproof is oftener present."¹⁴² He added that Pudd'nhead Wilson contained "... some of the most corrosive comment on

¹³⁶ Bernard DeVoto, Mark Twain's America (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1932), 353 pp.

¹³⁷ Ibid., p. 42.

¹³⁸ Ibid., p. 82.

¹³⁹ Ibid., p. 91.

¹⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 265.

¹⁴¹ Ibid., p. 207.

¹⁴² Ibid., p. 164.

threw into the field a literary bomb, a "literary
 America," as it were, a bomb which was
 Twin. It attacked with it the literary world, and it
 not believe the literary world a "literary world" and
 environment, 137 did not believe the literary world a "literary
 influence, 138 believed the literary world a "literary world"
 fore as Brooks has claimed, 139 and said that the literary
 early life proves conclusively that it was a "literary world"
 before anything else, 140 before anything else that the literary
 of literature, 141 before anything else that the literary
 help Twin's and his "literary world" and his "literary world"
 was often beneficial, 142 before anything else that the literary
 occasionally, 143 before anything else that the literary
 "The purpose of the literary world is to be a literary world,"
 is often present, 144 before anything else that the literary
 contained," 145 before anything else that the literary

136 Bernard DeVoto, "The Literary World,"
 Little, Brown and Company, 1934, p. 136.
 137 Ibid., p. 137.
 138 Ibid., p. 138.
 139 Ibid., p. 139.
 140 Ibid., p. 140.
 141 Ibid., p. 141.
 142 Ibid., p. 142.
 143 Ibid., p. 143.
 144 Ibid., p. 144.
 145 Ibid., p. 145.

American life ever written,"¹⁴³ and said of the Twain who wrote The Gilded Age, "Alone among the novelists of the time he concerns himself with the national muck."¹⁴⁴ DeVoto's implications, however, were not that Twain did become a truly great social satirist. Twain saw the evils of society, started to attack them, but eventually realized the futility of ever completely reforming the human race, and, like the pioneer he was, gave vent to laughter--the first instance of tragic laughter in American literature.¹⁴⁵ DeVoto considered this the most sensible attitude that Twain could have adopted, since no amount of satire could jar mankind out of its complacency. Thus Twain stepped aside, contemplated the weaknesses of humanity, and in a mood of Olympian despair, introduced tragic laughter into the Gilded Age. Instead of attempting to reform mankind, Twain made true art out of native American humor--the tall tale--and thereby became

¹⁴³Ibid., p. 284.

¹⁴⁴Ibid., p. 287.

¹⁴⁵Ibid., p. 268.

American life ever written, and so of the American

wrote The Golden Age, "Alone among the novelists of the

time he concerned himself with the national soul."

implications, however, were not that there is a thing

great social criticism. There are two sides to every

started to attack them. But on the whole, the

of ever completely reforming the human race, and like the

pioneer he was, have been so far from the first

tragic laughter in American literature. The

this the most essential criticism that could be made,

since no amount of action could be taken out of the

place. This is the main criticism, and it is the

ness of human life, and it is the main criticism

advanced tragic literature. The criticism is

attempting to raise the question of the

native American humor—their life and their

1st Ed. . . 384.

1st Ed. . . 387.

1st Ed. . . 388.

the folk artist of the frontier.¹⁴⁶

DeVoto, in his role as interpreter of Mark Twain, has reaffirmed his ideas in later books and essays. After poring over the unpublished Twain papers, DeVoto concluded that Twain's social criticism increased in later years.¹⁴⁷ DeVoto, however, made no other changes in his original theory, although he granted the increasing importance of religious and ethical problems in Twain's mind.¹⁴⁸ In "Mark Twain: the Ink of History," DeVoto's theory remained basically the same.¹⁴⁹ Believing that critics have always tried to fit

¹⁴⁶DeVoto's argument had been anticipated in Ludwig Lewisohn, Expression in America (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1932), pp. 212-32. Since this was published earlier in the same year as DeVoto's book, it seems probable that both men attained their positions independently of each other. The factual similarity is striking: according to Lewisohn, Twain's literary type was the folk-humor of the democratic masses (p. 214); he was not frustrated and underwent no ordeal (p. 218); probably had left none of his ideas unsaid when he died (p. 225); and although he wrote some satire, he was at his best when writing the folk-art of his boyhood days (p. 231). The interpretation of these facts by Lewisohn, however, was markedly different from DeVoto. Whereas DeVoto thought Twain's type of art truly great, Lewisohn ranked Twain--the folk artist--at the bottom of the scale. The creator, at variance with his age, was foremost in literature; the artificer, who used old materials but had some imagination, ranked second; and the bard, who merely told the people what they wanted to hear, was the lowest form of literary man.

¹⁴⁷Bernard DeVoto, "The Mark Twain Papers," The Saturday Review of Literature, XIX (December, 1938), 14.

¹⁴⁸Ibid., p. 15.

¹⁴⁹Bernard DeVoto, "Mark Twain: The Ink of History," Forays and Rebuttals (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1936), pp. 348-72.

Twain into a pet theory,¹⁵⁰ he stated that Twain performed his duty as a "revolutionary artist" by bringing American literature into organic relationship with the national life.¹⁵¹ This closely parallels his older idea that Twain was the folk artist of the frontier. DeVoto now saw much more social criticism in Twain. "From his earliest to his latest works, his books are crammed full of satirical finalities."¹⁵² He also added that ". . . they sometimes attained a level beyond which no satire in all literature has gone."¹⁵³ Clinging, however, to his older theory of Olympian despair, DeVoto said Twain saw, before any other American writer, the folly of believing in human perfectibility, and therefore did not concentrate on satires alone.

In Mark Twain in Eruption DeVoto warned that Twain's later tirades were often distorted and should not be taken as complete truth.¹⁵⁴ DeVoto also stressed the importance of the heavy load of personal sorrows that helped twist his

¹⁵⁰Ibid., p. 348.

¹⁵¹Ibid., p. 360.

¹⁵²Ibid., p. 365.

¹⁵³Loc. cit.

¹⁵⁴Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain in Eruption, Bernard DeVoto, editor (New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1940), p. x.

writings away from frontier humor.¹⁵⁵ Not possessing great analytical powers, Twain saw that something terrible was wrong with the world, but he could not understand it:

Mark Twain had awareness of the forces which men like Rogers and Carnegie expressed or the kind of power they were using. He saw Roosevelt's timidity and exhibitionism, he saw Carnegie's absurdity, he saw the enfranchised arrogance of the plutocracy, but he did not even speculate about the current that ran beneath the froth.¹⁵⁶

Finally, in Mark Twain at Work, DeVoto regarded his thesis, after further work in the Mark Twain papers, as established.¹⁵⁷ Continuing to mention the heavy toll Twain's personal tragedies had upon his literary career,¹⁵⁸ DeVoto implied that since Twain tried to believe no man responsible for his own life, then corrective satire would be next to useless.¹⁵⁹ DeVoto concluded that in Twain "... American literature perceived for the first time, a limitation of the democratic hope."¹⁶⁰

¹⁵⁵Ibid., p. xix.

¹⁵⁶Ibid., p. xxvi.

¹⁵⁷Bernard DeVoto, Mark Twain at Work (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1942), p. viii.

¹⁵⁸Ibid., pp. 123-24.

¹⁵⁹Ibid., p. 116.

¹⁶⁰Ibid., p. 102. DeVoto has published several other articles on Twain, but, unfortunately, they produce little more than a general "name-calling" directed at other Mark Twain critics.

writings were given to the...
analytical powers, which was the...
wrong with the world, and he...
Mark Twain had...
like Rogers and...
power they were...
and exhibition...
see the...
he did not even...
beneath the...

Finally, in...
theater, after...
established...
personal tragedies...
implied that...
for his own life...
caseless...
literature...
democratic...

154...
155...
156...
157...
158...
159...
160...
161...
162...
163...
164...
165...
166...
167...
168...
169...
170...
171...
172...
173...
174...
175...
176...
177...
178...
179...
180...
181...
182...
183...
184...
185...
186...
187...
188...
189...
190...
191...
192...
193...
194...
195...
196...
197...
198...
199...
200...

The book reviews of Mark Twain's America were even less favorable than the first reviews of The Ordeal of Mark Twain. Harry Lorin Binsse said DeVoto had done a great service to American letters by placing Twain where he belonged--in the school of frontier humor.¹⁶¹ Binsse regretted DeVoto's savage attack on Brooks, but thought the attack was necessary if Twain were to be evaluated properly.¹⁶² An anonymous critic in The Forum said Mark Twain's America was stimulating, but had many "lame" ideas, and did not give a complete picture of Twain.¹⁶³ Mark Van Doren, even less appreciative, said DeVoto attacked Brooks for having a theory, but DeVoto then evolved inaccurate theories of his own.¹⁶⁴ Too angry to look clearly at Brooks, DeVoto went to the other extreme in his criticism.¹⁶⁵ Newton Arvin, who had little praise for DeVoto, called his book shallow and romantic.¹⁶⁶ Arvin's review emphasized the correctness of

¹⁶¹Harry Lorin Binsse, "Mark Twain's America," The Bookman, LXXV (October, 1932), 630.

¹⁶²Loc. cit.

¹⁶³"Books in Brief," The Forum, LXXXVIII (December, 1932), ix.

¹⁶⁴Mark Van Doren, "DeVoto's America," The Nation, CXXXV (October, 1932), 370.

¹⁶⁵Ibid., p. 371.

¹⁶⁶Newton Arvin, "Mark Twain Simplified," The New Republic, LXXII (October, 1932), 211.

such Brooksonian ideas as the "insidious" influence of Twain's family upon him, and Twain's "debauched" integrity, caused by his obsession to make money.¹⁶⁷

DeVoto's ideas, however, like those of Brooks twelve years before, gradually became accepted by many scholars. In the period between 1932 and the present there have been no completely new theories about Twain, but a tremendous number of critical opinions in which the older theories have been synthesized. A brief look, chronologically, at some of the periodical articles, and later, some of the books dealing with Twain, will round out this representative sampling of Mark Twain criticism.

The more recent periodical articles, many of them book reviews, present several different attitudes toward Twain. In an anecdotal article in 1935 Owen Wister, an old friend of Twain's, undertook a defense of his judgment and intellect.¹⁶⁸ Wister reluctantly admitted some repression in Twain's writings, but refused to adopt the complete Brooksonian thesis, and contended that throughout his literary career Twain attacked social injustices.¹⁶⁹

¹⁶⁷Ibid., p. 212..

¹⁶⁸Owen Wister, "In Homage to Mark Twain," Harper's Monthly Magazine, CLXXI (October, 1935), 552.

¹⁶⁹Ibid., p. 554..

such Brookman ideas as the "literary" and "artistic" family upon him, and Twain's "literary" and "artistic" by his obsession to make money.¹⁶⁷

DeVoto's ideas, however, like those of Brookman years before, gradually passed unheeded in many quarters. In the period between 1892 and the present there have been no completely new theories about Twain, and a tremendous number of critical opinions in which the older theories have been synthesized. A critical look at these theories, some of the periodical articles and later, some of the books dealing with Twain, will reveal our false representations of Mark Twain criticism.

The more recent periodical articles, many of them book reviews, present several different statements about Twain. In an anecdotal article in 1922, Mrs. Lister, an old friend of Twain's, and others, a sentence of his judgment and intellect.¹⁶⁸ After various remarks about his position in Twain's writings, she returned to about the complete Brookman thesis, and concluded that throughout his literary career Twain attacked social injustices.¹⁶⁹

¹⁶⁷ Ibid., p. 212.

¹⁶⁸ Mrs. Lister, in *Twain*, ed. by H. C. Houder, 1922, p. 212. *Monthly Magazine*, CLXXI (October, 1922).

¹⁶⁹ Ibid., p. 224.

According to Wister, these national evils changed Twain from a naturally buoyant man to an embittered pessimist.¹⁷⁰

Three writers followed parts of the Brooksian thesis. Newton Arvin agreed that Twain's appeal is to adolescent minds and tastes.¹⁷¹ Arvin, however, felt that Twain would be remembered in the future for his occasional blistering social criticism.¹⁷² Alexander Cowie agreed with Brooks that Twain had been repressed, but believed the repressed material was indecencies of language, and not social satire.¹⁷³ Theodore Dreiser, who called Twain a powerful and original thinker,¹⁷⁴ followed Brooks in attributing to the genteel tradition the forces that turned Twain away from social criticism.¹⁷⁵ Dreiser also said Twain was influenced by ". . . the noisy and quite vacuous applause accorded him as Genius Jester to the American booboisie."¹⁷⁶

One essayist, Dorothy Waples, held the DeVoto idea

¹⁷⁰Ibid., p. 556.

¹⁷¹Newton Arvin, "Mark Twain: 1835-1935," The New Republic, LXXXIII (June, 1935), 125.

¹⁷²Ibid., p. 126.

¹⁷³Alexander Cowie, "Mark Twain Controls Himself," American Literature, X (January, 1939), 491.

¹⁷⁴Theodore Dreiser, "Mark The Double Twain," The English Journal, XXIV (October, 1935), 615.

¹⁷⁵Ibid., p. 621.

¹⁷⁶Loc. cit.

According to Slater, these writers and others have been
from a materialist, Marxist and to an extent socialist
Three writers have been named: 1. The American writer

Newton Arvin agrees that there is a materialist
mind and matter. 171. Arvin, however, does not believe

be remembered in the future for his materialist philosophy
social criticism. 172. The writer does agree with Arvin

that Twain had been reversed, but still was the reversed
materialist was inconsistent of language and not social

173. Theodore Dreiser was called Twain's opposite
and original thinker. 174. Twain's position is similar to

the materialist position the writer has taken
from social criticism. 175. Twain's position is

176. The writer and Twain are similar
recorded him as Twain's dealer to the writer's position

One essayist, Arthur Ripstein, held the Twain

176. Twain, p. 176.
177. Newton Arvin, Twain's Materialism, 1917, p. 176.

178. Twain, p. 178.
179. Twain's Materialism, 1917, p. 179.

180. Twain's Materialism, 1917, p. 180.

181. Twain's Materialism, 1917, p. 181.

that Twain was a product of the Middle West.¹⁷⁷ She saw some satire in The Gilded Age, but felt Twain was more sympathetic than critical toward Colonel Sellers.¹⁷⁸ Her final judgment about Twain was that "He loved men too much or recognized too much his own sins ever to become a satirist. There was something in Mark Twain that made him forgive weakness."¹⁷⁹

Many other short articles on Twain have appeared, but most of the book reviews added little original material, and the more specialized articles need not be considered at present in this sampling of critical attitudes. Much more important are the books, dealing with Twain, published since Mark Twain's America in 1932.¹⁸⁰

V. F. Calverton, whose book on American literature was published the same year as DeVoto's, had one or two

¹⁷⁷Dorothy Waples, "The Middle West Finds a Voice: Mark Twain," The Culture of the Middle West, Lawrence College Faculty Lecture Series (Appleton, Wisconsin: Lawrence College Press, 1944), p. 41.

¹⁷⁸Ibid., p. 52.

¹⁷⁹Ibid., p. 54.

¹⁸⁰It is interesting to note, however, that despite widespread mention of Twain's social satire by other critics, Oscar Cargill, in The Social Revolt In American Literature 1888-1914 (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1933), 649 pp., does not mention Mark Twain, nor is Twain included in American Issues, vol. I of The Social Record, Willard Thorp, Merle Curti, and Carlos Baker, editors (Chicago: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1941), 1035 pp.

that Twain was a product of the Middle West, and his
some satire in *The Gilded Age*, but Twain was not
pathetic than critical toward himself. His
judgment about himself was that he was not a
convinced too much his own view to write a satire.
There was something in Twain that made his
weakness.

Many other short stories were written
but most of the book reviews were of the highest
tal, and the more successful at least were to come
after that period. In this period of critical
which some have called the "Twain period" in
which some have called the "Twain period" in
which some have called the "Twain period" in
which some have called the "Twain period" in
which some have called the "Twain period" in

177 Twain's papers, the Twain papers, the Twain papers,
Mark Twain, the culture of the Twain papers, the Twain papers,
less Twain's papers, the Twain papers, the Twain papers,
College Press, 1901, p. 11.

178 Ibid., p. 11.
179 Ibid., p. 11.

180 It is interesting to note that Twain's
widest range of subjects is found in his early work,
Oscar Reisch, in *The Twain Papers*, p. 11.
181-182 (New York: The Twain Papers, 1901, p. 11).
does not mention Twain's early work, but Twain's
early papers, vol. 1 of *The Twain Papers*, p. 11.
Hart, Charles, and Charles, *The Twain Papers*, p. 11.
Lippincott Company, 1901, p. 11.

similar ideas, but principally used the Brooksonian theory as a basis for his own Marxian interpretation.¹⁸¹ He called Twain a product of the frontier,¹⁸² considered the young Mark Twain of the frontier the great Mark Twain,¹⁸³ and added, ". . . Mark Twain must be credited with being the first American prose writer of any importance."¹⁸⁴ Although Twain always echoed the "petty bourgeois" philosophy and ideals,¹⁸⁵ his Gilded Age did anticipate the "attacking novels" of the future.¹⁸⁶ Calverton said, "Ever eager, especially in his later days, to be a Hamlet, he was forced to remain a Falstaff."¹⁸⁷ He concluded, however, "In the twentieth century, if he lived until our day, it is even likely that he might have joined in with Dreiser and taken a communistic stand."¹⁸⁸

Granville Hicks took a few ideas from DeVoto, but

¹⁸¹v. F. Calverton, The Liberation of American Literature (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1932), pp. 318-28.

¹⁸²Ibid., p. 320.

¹⁸³Ibid., p. 321.

¹⁸⁴Ibid., p. 319.

¹⁸⁵Ibid., p. 328.

¹⁸⁶Ibid., p. 327.

¹⁸⁷Ibid., p. 320.

¹⁸⁸Ibid., p. 327.

similar ideas, but particularly with the American people
 as a basis for his own working interpretation. He called
 Taine a product of his time. He pronounced the French
 Mark Taine of the French, the great French, and
 added, "Mark Taine must be studied with being the
 first American writer of the twentieth century."
 Taine always echoed the "happy omens" of the
 ideas, his blind and did not grasp the "strange
 novels" of the future. Emerson said, "Every one
 peculiarly in his later days, to be a Frenchman, or a German
 to remain a Frenchman, he considered Frenchman, and the
 twentieth century, it is the first with us, it is the
 likely to be a great one, in which the French and German
 a comprehensive study of
 General's French book, for which I am indebted to

EFFICIENT
 ERASE

1814. F. Carverton, The American, New York, 1814.
 1815. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1815.

- 1814. F. Carverton, The American, New York, 1814.
- 1815. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1815.
- 1816. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1816.
- 1817. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1817.
- 1818. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1818.
- 1819. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1819.
- 1820. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1820.
- 1821. New York, Charles Scribner's Sons, 1821.

for the most part followed Brooks.¹⁸⁹ A product of the frontier,¹⁹⁰ Twain did not live up to his potentialities, for he ". . . delivered himself into the hands of the genteel tradition. It could not suppress his inborn genius, but neither could it develop that genius. . . ." ¹⁹¹ Hicks believed that The Gilded Age, an ambitious but superficial satire, was Twain's only major work which dealt with important American movements of the later nineteenth century.¹⁹² Twain saw the abuses in the land, did not understand them, and remained principally an entertainer.¹⁹³

Minnie M. Brashear's Mark Twain Son of Missouri, which appeared in 1934, was, in many respects, in opposition to the Brooksian theory. She said in her preface:

This book is an attempt to verify an impression, formed from personal observation, that commentaries on Mark

¹⁸⁹Granville Hicks, The Great Tradition, An Interpretation of American Literature Since the Civil War (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1933), pp. 38-49, 68-72.

¹⁹⁰Ibid., p. 40.

¹⁹¹Ibid., p. 42.

¹⁹²Ibid., p. 45. Hicks added, however, (p. 68) that of the paltry half dozen political novels written in and about the Reconstruction Period, only The Gilded Age and Henry Adams' Democracy are still read.

¹⁹³Ibid., pp. 45-46.

Twain which have pointed to his Middle West up-bringing as unfortunate, even tragic in its suppressions, are not true accounts.¹⁹⁴

Her principal thesis was that Twain was a well-bred product of Missouri, who was benefited by a well-developed Southern culture, much of which had stemmed from Europe. Not as concerned with the "native" or "frontier" aspects of Missouri as DeVoto, Brashear pointed out the relatively high degree of culture present in Hannibal in the 1830's and 1840's.

Although her study dealt more with Twain's backgrounds (especially his reading in eighteenth century English authors) than with Twain himself, and did not consider Twain's social criticism at great length, Brashear did believe much of Twain's satire was important and powerful. Twain was a genius,¹⁹⁵ America's greatest humorist,¹⁹⁶ and one of the sources of his strength was his sensitiveness to social distinctions.¹⁹⁷ Emphasizing Jane Clemen's beneficial influences,¹⁹⁸ Brashear stated, "From her must have been derived what was most fanciful and unusual in the boy,

¹⁹⁴Minnie M. Brashear, Mark Twain Son of Missouri (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1934), p. xiii.

¹⁹⁵Ibid., p. 24.

¹⁹⁶Ibid., p. 225.

¹⁹⁷Ibid., p. 74.

¹⁹⁸Ibid., p. 84.

his humor and sure satire, and his passionate hatred of cruelty."¹⁹⁹ Although in many of his early writings Twain seemed to have faith in the manifest destiny policy, and at times was almost the epic spokesman of the movement, he eventually rebelled against it, and in his disillusion turned to satire.²⁰⁰ Brashear, comparing Twain to the great eighteenth century humorists and satirists, said his Hadleyburg story was ". . . as relentless in its indictment of mankind as anything in Gulliver's Travels. It belongs in the eighteenth-century tradition."²⁰¹ She continued her comparison of Twain and Jonathan Swift:

Both contrast animals with men to the discouragement of men. Both are stern moralists. It would be difficult to find two writers, in fact, who more consistently employed their satirical pens to reveal how far the human race falls short in disinterested social ethics, and what a sorry failure civilization is, than Swift and Mark Twain.²⁰²

Brashear did not consider Twain entirely successful in his satire, for he ". . . had to flounder with his fellows,"²⁰³ when his high ideals had to submit to the realities of life.

¹⁹⁹Ibid., pp. 82-83.

²⁰⁰Ibid., p. 75.

²⁰¹Ibid., p. 234.

²⁰²Ibid., p. 240.

²⁰³Ibid., p. 252.

His later years, however, were tremendously significant because of the ". . . fight which he fought to the last. His defiance of the powers that ruled the cosmos, as he conceived them, is of heroic proportions. At the end he was an American Prometheus. . . ."204 Brashear concluded that ". . . his hope for social justice, for the raison d'être of America, was a passion larger than that of ordinary men. In that passion he called to account the very gods of the universe."205

One of the most important studies, Mark Twain, The Man and His Work, was published in 1935 by Edward Wagenknecht. Many other critics had stressed the influence of environment on Mark Twain. Wagenknecht, however, placed less emphasis upon this, and instead stressed Twain's own temperament as the most important influence in his development. More detached in his attitude toward Twain than many of the earlier critics had been, Wagenknecht attempted to arrive at a middle ground between Brooks and DeVoto without being carried away by either extreme. Brooks had built his entire case around the repression theory, and DeVoto had insisted Twain was a great folk artist of the frontier, but Wagenknecht, with an attitude somewhat similar to Samuel

204 Ibid., p. 262.

205 Ibid., p. 263.

McChord Crothers, judged Twain not by what he might have been, but by what he actually produced. He called for a look at the record. On the frontier controversy Wagenknecht sided with DeVoto.²⁰⁶ His ideas on repression and frustration were mixed. Olivia Clemens had a taste for Twain's poorer literature,²⁰⁷ and did not truly understand her husband.²⁰⁸ Olivia's censorship, however, was usually beneficial,²⁰⁹ and Jane Clemens had not been a thwarting influence upon her son.²¹⁰ Wagenknecht also gave the general impression that Twain, truly a perpetual "Youth," had to depend upon his wife, Howells, H. H. Rogers, and others, and that he, of his own accord, leaned upon them. Wagenknecht felt that Twain's mind was not great,²¹¹ and had a marked degree of instability.²¹² He exaggerated everything in his life, including his moods. When he was angry, he was violent; when he was melancholy, he was immersed in his own bitter gloom; and when he was happy, he was hilariously

²⁰⁶Edward Wagenknecht, Mark Twain, The Man and His Work (New Haven: The Yale University Press, 1935), pp. 69-71.

²⁰⁷Ibid., p. 65.

²⁰⁸Ibid., p. 184.

²⁰⁹Loc. cit.

²¹⁰Ibid., p. 183.

²¹¹Ibid., p. 119.

²¹²Ibid., p. 107.

exuberant. Satire, a delicate weapon, was difficult for an adolescent thinker like Twain, but despite his natural penchant for humor he had a serious side:

Mark Twain was a born reformer; nothing could be further from the truth than to imagine that he was a humorist pure and simple in the early days and became interested in more serious matters only toward the end when personal sorrows had hurt him and bitter reflection imposed the feeling that all was wrong with the world.²¹³

Wagenknecht, developing his point, also said, ". . . there never was a time when he was indifferent to corruption and cruelty, when he was not ready to smite the serpent whenever it should raise its ugly head."²¹⁴ Thus Wagenknecht recognized more social criticism in Twain than had many earlier critics. However, to balance the scales, Wagenknecht pointed out that Twain's extreme emotionality often led him to champion someone merely because he was an underdog.²¹⁵ Twain's satire also failed at times because he grew so angry at the object of his intended satire that he could only rage incoherently at it. Petty incidents, rather than great evils, usually aroused his ire.²¹⁶ Wagenknecht, then, seeing more social satire in him than has

²¹³Ibid., p. 234.

²¹⁴Loc. cit.

²¹⁵Ibid., p. 237.

²¹⁶Ibid., p. 97.

exuberant. But, a delicate weapon, was difficult for an adolescent thinker like Twain, but despite his natural penchant for humor he had a serious side.

Mark Twain was a born reformer; nothing could be further from the truth than to imagine that he was a humorist pure and simple in the early days and years. He was interested in more serious matters only toward the end when personal sorrows had hurt him and bitter reflection imposed the feeling that all was wrong with the world.²¹³

Especially, developing his point, also said, "... there never was a time when he was indifferent to corruption and cruelty, when he was not ready to seize the nearest opportunity it should raise its ugly head."²¹⁴ Thus, Twain's recognition of social evils in Twain had many earlier outlets. However, to balance the scales, Twain's social criticism, which pointed out that Twain's extreme social criticism often led him to caricature someone merely because he was an underdog.²¹⁵ Twain's satire also failed at times because he grew so angry at the object of his intended satire that he could only rage incoherently at it. Petty incidents, rather than great evils, usually aroused his ire.²¹⁶ Twain's insight, then, seeing more social evils in his than his

²¹³ Twain, p. 234.
²¹⁴ Twain, p. 235.
²¹⁵ Twain, p. 237.
²¹⁶ Twain, p. 238.

usually been acknowledged, also saw his limitations as a reformer, and felt that the "problem" of Mark Twain, which had existed for over a decade, was not unsolvable by an objective look at Twain himself.

Another important book which appeared in 1935 was the Mark Twain volume in The American Writers Series, edited by Fred Lewis Pattee. In his introduction Pattee developed further many of the ideas he had held for twenty years.²¹⁷

²¹⁷Fred Lewis Pattee, Mark Twain, Representative Selections, Harry Hayden Clark, general editor; The American Writers Series (New York: American Book Company, 1935), pp. xi-lui. Pattee's criticism of Twain first appeared in his A History of American Literature Since 1870 (New York: The Century Company, 1915), pp. 45-62. Pattee said, (p. 58) "There are three Mark Twains: there is Mark Twain, the droll comedian, who wrote for the masses and made them laugh; there is Mark Twain, the indignant protester, who arose ever and anon to true eloquence in his denunciation of tyranny and pretense; and there is Mark Twain, the romancer, who in his boyhood had dreamed by the great river and who later caught the romance of a period in American life." According to Pattee, this third Mark Twain was the only one who would live on in American literature. Yet Twain still did not live up to his potentialities, and Pattee said (p. 61) that if he had possessed more constructive skill and the ability to develop character, he might have said the last word in American fiction.

Pattee's next major Twain criticism was "On the Rating of Mark Twain," American Mercury, XIV (June, 1928), 183-91. Pattee admitted, with Brooks, that Twain was a thwarted genius, but he blamed Twain's environment, not his family and friends (pp. 187-8). Not a true literary great (p. 191), Twain had been overrated. He was first of all a lecturer (p. 189), and was not a great reformer: "A large area of Mark Twain's writings (p. 187), the most arid of all, was written in the crusader spirit, with the suppressed premise always that it was still possible to make the world over."

Twain was still overrated,²¹⁸ and had harmed himself by attempting unsuccessfully to join the aristocrats of literature. He could have achieved literary greatness by remaining in his Missouri environment.²¹⁹ Pattee then added, "All of the great masters have been men with a message-- Mark Twain taught us nothing: he entertained us, he told romantic stories, he made us laugh."²²⁰ Pattee said that the Gilded Age had been in dire need of a dictator:

But no dictator arose, only a satirist. Mark Twain did lay about him lustily. Satire he wrote in the hotness of wrath, satire touching every sore spot in the national life. A Don Quixote figure, he rode furiously in every direction tilting at the windmills of religious fanaticism, political chicanery, social inanity, judicial injustice, sentimental romance.²²¹

But despite Twain's vehement attacks, Pattee considered him a failure as a social critic:

He accomplished nothing. Only a few, when the whole population is considered, ever read The Gilded Age, and these few read it not for its satire: they read it in spite of its satire. . . . If it was a bombshell thrown at entrenched wickedness to make way for justice and right, why the hundreds of farcial illustrations in the first edition? Why the sentimentality of the love story, even in Mark Twain's sections?

Mark Twain was no economic critic, no thinker let

²¹⁸Pattee, Mark Twain, Representative Selections, op. cit., p. lx.

²¹⁹Ibid., p. xlviii.

²²⁰Ibid., p. li.

²²¹Ibid., pp. xli-xlii.

loose in the economic jungle of an epoch. Emotionalism, Peter Pan logic, picturesqueness, but no criticism. The man lacked honesty, lacked detachment, lacked ability to see himself in perspective. No man more completely a citizen of the Gilded Age than Mark Twain himself.²²²

Edgar Lee Masters published a full-length volume in 1938, Mark Twain, A Portrait, and although chiefly an echo of Brooks and larded with scholarly inaccuracies, Masters' volume did contain several telling points on the occasions when he considered the satire in Twain. In addition to seconding the Brooksonian repression theory, Masters added that Twain himself was weak, and with little resistance allowed his life to be guided by others. Admitting that Twain, in his literature, gradually turned to satire, Masters followed with his most acute critical observation:

Twain did laugh a good deal to the last. But he laughed at manikins, at small frauds, at petty cheats. The great mountebanks and influences who were devouring his country had his friendly and unsuspecting association.²²³

Although Twain did have a natural genius for satire, he never succeeded in it because he had no philosophy of life, no genuine convictions about any important thing,²²⁴ and possessed a permanently immature mind.²²⁵ Masters con-

²²²Ibid., p. xliii.

²²³Edgar Lee Masters, Mark Twain, A Portrait (New York and London: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1938), p. 85.

²²⁴Ibid., p. 169.

²²⁵Ibid., p. 100.

loose in the...
Peter F. D. Jones, Jr.,...
The...
ability...
consequently...
himself...

...
1938, ...
of ...
volume ...
when he ...
according ...
that ...
I owed ...
in his ...
I owed ...
Twain ...
at ...
great ...
country ...
Although ...
never ...
no ...
possessed ...

RECEIVED
JAN 10 1939

...
...
...
...
...

cluded that Twain, unlike Whitman who risked his popularity by attacking the really important national evils,²²⁶ never jeopardized his own position: "Mark Twain means safe water. He chose his pseudonym with fatal accuracy, whether meaning to do so or not. He always sailed in safe water."²²⁷ Masters, like Brooks, regretted that Twain did not become a great national satirist,²²⁸ and also said, "It was reserved to Mark Twain to be the most tragic victim of the Gilded Age."²²⁹

In 1942 Walter Fuller Taylor, considering only one phase of Twain's satire, said his economic criticism was not profound or steady, but was, nevertheless, abundant and important.²³⁰ Taylor considered A Connecticut Yankee the best economic novel of its time--better than Looking Backward or A Hazard of New Fortunes.²³¹ Twain, however, was not the greatest economic critic of the time. Taylor pointed out that the economy in The Gilded Age was that of the frontier,

²²⁶Ibid., p. 98.

²²⁷Ibid., p. 101.

²²⁸Ibid., p. 9.

²²⁹Ibid., p. 238.

²³⁰Walter Fuller Taylor, The Economic Novel in America (Chapel Hill: The University of North Carolina Press, 1942), p. 144.

²³¹Ibid., p. 121.

not the machine,²³² and that Twain was not keenly aware, in 1873, of the problem of attaining social justice in an industrialized society,²³³ nor did he ever see dangers that might be caused by technological unemployment.²³⁴ He also adapted himself to conditions, rather than attack major evils,²³⁵ and did not satirize the "machine," because he was carried away in enthusiasm for it.²³⁶ Taylor's conclusions were:

As a businessman, he joined his contemporaries in glorifying the machine, fascinated with the possibilities of exploiting it and of controlling nature through it. As a satirist, he joined his contemporaries in attacking never the machine itself, but certain economic abuses, such as speculation, which the machine, with its enormous release of energy, had made more dangerous.

Mark Twain's, then, was a comparatively simple, coherent philosophy of acquisition, control of obvious abuses, and concern for the interests of the whole people. Within him, satirist, capitalist, and democrat worked toward the same object--that of enjoying the uses of the machine, and lessening the abuses.²³⁷

²³²Ibid., p. 124.

²³³Ibid., p. 127.

²³⁴Ibid., p. 131.

²³⁵Ibid., p. 129.

²³⁶Ibid., p. 132.

²³⁷Ibid., p. 146. Taylor's ideas were largely carry-overs from his earlier article, "Mark Twain and the Machine Age," South Atlantic Quarterly, XXXVII (October, 1938), 384-96.

not the machine, 232, and that with respect to the
1873, of the problem of establishing a national bank in the
established society, 232, and the fact that the
might be caused by technological unemployment, 232, the
adapted himself to conditions, 232, and that major
evils, 232, and that the existing conditions, 232, were
carried away in the same way as the old conditions
were:

As a businessman, he joined the movement in 1873
flying the machine, 232, and the fact that the
explosion, 232, and the fact that the
as a result, he joined the movement in 1873
never the machine, 232, and the fact that the
such as specialization, 232, and the fact that the
release of energy, 232, and the fact that the
...
from 1873, 232, and the fact that the
heretic philosophy of individualism, 232, and the fact that the
classes, and concern for the interests of the whole
people, 232, and the fact that the
worked toward the same object - that of ending the
uses of the machine, and releasing the energy of

232, 1873, p. 134.
232, 1873, p. 135.
232, 1873, p. 136.
232, 1873, p. 137.
232, 1873, p. 138.
232, 1873, p. 139.

232, 1873, p. 140. (Text is too faint to transcribe accurately)

In 1943 another full length study of Twain appeared-- John DeLancey Ferguson's Mark Twain: Man and Legend.²³⁸ Not as important as Wagenknecht's work, this book nevertheless is important because it clears away several fallacies about Twain that had evolved through the years. Ferguson took more of an anti-Brooks than a pro-DeVoto stand. A son of the Southwest,²³⁹ Twain's natural instincts were for humor,²⁴⁰ and in later life he never regretted that he had been a humorist.²⁴¹ Neither Twain's mother, wife, nor friends had been repressing influences upon him;²⁴² he, however, was by nature extravagant, emotional, moody, and inconsistent.²⁴³ Ferguson, who depicted Twain's life as a series of personal misfortunes that helped embitter him, believed that he had many shortcomings as a social critic. Confident that the present was better than the past, ". . . Mark still accepted unquestionably the nineteenth-century

²³⁸ John DeLancey Ferguson, Mark Twain: Man and Legend (New York: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1943), 352 pp.

²³⁹ Ibid., p. 15.

²⁴⁰ Ibid., p. 36.

²⁴¹ Ibid., p. 319.

²⁴² Ibid., pp. 41, 152, 123.

²⁴³ Ibid., p. 215.

In 1917 another trial took place at the same court.
 John Delaney Peterson's trial took place in 1918.
 Not as important as the first trial, this trial was
 less important because it was a very short trial
 about two or three days. The trial was held in
 took more or an anti-trial than a trial. The trial
 of the defendant, 239, was a trial. The trial was
 humor, 240, and in later life he was regarded as a
 been a humorist. 241. The trial was a trial. The trial
 friends had been regarding the trial as a trial. The trial
 however, was by nature a trial. The trial was a trial.
 inconsistent. 242. The trial was a trial. The trial
 series of personal attacks and the trial was a trial.
 lived that he had any sense. The trial was a trial.
 friend that the present was better than the past. The trial
 Mark still accepted unquestionably the nineteenth-century

239 John Delaney Peterson, *Mark Twain and the Law*
 (New York: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1917), p. 12.
 240 *Ibid.*, p. 12.
 241 *Ibid.*, p. 31.
 242 *Ibid.*, pp. 31, 32, 33.
 243 *Ibid.*, p. 33.

dogma of progress. In common with most of his contemporaries, he identified material conveniences with moral growth. . . ."²⁴⁴ Twain's satire against rulers and governments was also often ineffective because his mind, not the greatest in the world, failed to achieve any clear understanding of the "state" and of the problems which arose in governing it.²⁴⁵ He also had a tendency to avoid satire whenever it might touch his personal friends. He would often bitterly excoriate some ruler whom he did not know personally, but if a personal acquaintance did something harmful to others, he remained strangely silent.²⁴⁶ A final shortcoming of Twain as a critic, according to Ferguson, was that with him always fluctuating between invective and burlesque in his critical writings, ". . . there was seldom a middle way between these when Mark's feelings were stirred. . . . True satire calls for a cool head and a cool heart, and Mark's were inflammable."²⁴⁷

Two good short studies appeared in 1943. Floyd

²⁴⁴Ibid., p. 205.

²⁴⁵Ibid., p. 244.

²⁴⁶Ibid., p. 249. Twain's refusal to publish a work arraigning Standard Oil, with which his friend H. H. Rogers was associated, is a good example of this point.

²⁴⁷Ibid., pp. 194-95.

dogma of progress. In contrast with this, the
german, he identified (and is) a...
growth... the...
monks was also...
greatest in the world, failed to...
standing of the...
in...
the...
often...
personally...
harsh...
final...
rec...
two...
was...
were...
a cool...
Two good...

July 1911
July 1911

July 1911
July 1911
July 1911
July 1911

Stovall,²⁴⁸ following DeVoto for the most part, believed the Bostonian literary influence was extremely beneficial to Twain. "He remained a Westerner, but his intellectual life was deepened and his literary style was improved by acquaintance with the culture of the American East and of Europe."²⁴⁹ Twain satirized the Gilded Age, but he was not a great satirist, for the reasons advanced by many other critics: he was too contradictory, emotional, and swept up by the tide of the times.²⁵⁰ "He was the greatest American writer of his generation, but he was not great enough to understand either himself or his country."²⁵¹ The second work, by Thomas M. Pearce,²⁵² depicted Twain as highly interested in social reform, but not completely capable of writing successful social criticism:

In San Francisco, he had written about corruption in the police department. Beneath the surface his passion for justice was as deep as Thoreau's, and his zeal for shedding light on dark places as earnest as Whitman's.²⁵³

²⁴⁸Floyd Stovall, American Idealism (Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1943), pp. 112-16.

²⁴⁹Ibid., p. 112.

²⁵⁰Ibid., pp. 113, 115.

²⁵¹Ibid., p. 116.

²⁵²Thomas M. Pearce, Democracy in Progress (Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 1943), pp. 204-13.

²⁵³Ibid., p. 207.

Pearce, speaking about The Gilded Age, then said:

The authors intended it as a satire on speculation in western lands, Congressional subsidies to railroads, fee to lobbyists and even to Congressmen for filling the "pork barrel." Neither Twain nor Warner could write such a book. Frank Norris could and Upton Sinclair, but they were not to publish novels for another thirty years.²⁵⁴

Pearce then contrasted, in the section immediately following, Twain's lack of social criticism by describing William Cullen Bryant's many reform activities.²⁵⁵

Carl Van Doren revised some of his earlier ideas when, in 1946, he published a revised edition of his study of the American novel. In the early edition²⁵⁶ Van Doren had followed Brooks. Twain's satire had been repressed by his wife and Howells;²⁵⁷ he was primarily a fun-maker, although he grew out of this somewhat in later years;²⁵⁸ and "... he shared in the furor of exploitation which followed the war and against which he had no artistic ideals to fortify him."²⁵⁹

²⁵⁴Ibid., p. 209.

²⁵⁵Ibid., pp. 210-12.

²⁵⁶Carl Van Doren, The American Novel (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1921), pp. 157-84.

²⁵⁷Ibid., p. 165.

²⁵⁸Ibid., p. 158.

²⁵⁹Ibid., p. 164.

Pastor, speaking from the pulpit said:

The author intended to call it a novel, but the
western lands, the people, the things, the
the 'good people', the 'good people', the
write such a book. The author, the author,
chief, but they were not so good as the
thirty years.

Pastor then continued, in a low voice, and
Twain's lack of ability to write a novel.
The author's own words were as follows:
Carl Van Doren, in his review of the novel, said:

In 1906, he published a review of the novel, in
American novel. In the review, he said:
The author, Twain, is a man of letters,
and Howell, he was a man of letters, and
grew out of the review of the novel, and
shared in the review of the novel, and
and against which he had no other words to say.

1906, p. 100.

1906, p. 100.

Carl Van Doren, The American Novel, 1906, p. 100.

1906, p. 100.

1906, p. 100.

1906, p. 100.

In the revised edition of 1946²⁶⁰ Van Doren still believed, but not so firmly as before, that Twain had been repressed, and still did not regard him as a great satirist:

Though his sensitive conscience had accused him of playing safe, he had probably spoken out on most of the matters which most concerned him. He was not primarily a thinker, but rather a natural force which had moved through the world laughing. . . .²⁶¹

Speaking of The Gilded Age, Van Doren said:

The age was gilded. Mark Twain, just arrived from simpler regions, mocked the tedious formalisms and accused the brazen corruption of the capital. To judge by his share of this joint record he was ready to become a national satirist and to hurl his laughter against a thousand abuses deserving scorn.

He did not become a national satirist or assume at least in public the unpopular role of critic of the age. Instead, urged by Howells, he turned back to his Middle Western recollections. . . .²⁶²

Van Doren concluded that what satirical attacks Twain did make were merely typical of the "average" American of his day.²⁶³

Three writers who in 1947 dealt briefly with Twain will serve to conclude this chapter. The first, Vernon Louis Parrington, Jr.,²⁶⁴ considered Twain only as he fitted

²⁶⁰Carl Van Doren, The American Novel 1789-1939 (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1946), pp. 137-62.

²⁶¹Ibid., p. 162.

²⁶²Ibid., p. 145.

²⁶³Ibid., p. 159.

²⁶⁴Vernon Louis Parrington, Jr., American Dreams, A Study of American Utopias (Providence, Rhode Island: Brown University Press, 1947), pp. 43-50.

into his own study of American utopian literature. Referring only to "The Curious Republic of Gondour," Parrington pointed out that Twain's idea of awarding votes according to intellectual capacity was ". . . at cross purposes with his own, more fundamental faith in democracy."²⁶⁵ Parrington stated, as a reason why Twain did not concern himself more with reform, that "The post Civil War period was not one in which attacks on the established system were encouraged."²⁶⁶ The second writer, Henry Bamford Parkes,²⁶⁷ who considered Huckleberry Finn Twain's only great book, believed with Brooks that Twain had been ". . . intimidated by the standards of gentility and decorum Eastern society imposed upon him, resenting them yet at the same time lacking sufficient self-assurance to reject them."²⁶⁸ Parkes' other ideas about Twain serve to sum up briefly the feelings of many other critics, although his total evaluation of Twain differs from the Brooksian interpretation. For Parkes Twain is ". . . almost an embodiment of the American norm . . . a case study of how the agrarian American submitted to capitalism." He

²⁶⁵Ibid., p. 50.

²⁶⁶Ibid., p. 43.

²⁶⁷Henry Bamford Parkes, The American Experience (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1947), pp. 229-61.

²⁶⁸Ibid., p. 260.

into his own study of American literature, and
only to "the literary world" of America, and
pointed out that Twain's idea of a "great
intellectual capacity" was "a great capacity
own, more fundamental than in literature."
stated, as a reason why Twain did not concern himself
with reform, that "the great thing he had in
which attacks on the established order were
The second writer, Henry Cabot Lodge, who
Hofstadter says Twain's only great enemy
Brooks that Twain had been "a... intellectual
of gentility and respectability and of the
representing them yet at the same time...
assurance to reject...
Twain serve to run up against the...
critics, although his...
the Brooks interpretation...
most an embodiment of the...
of how the American..."

202
1914, p. 30.

202
1914, p. 31.

202
Henry Cabot Lodge, The American Renaissance,
New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1914, p. 30-31.

202
1914, p. 32.

recognized that Twain ". . . despised pretense and sham, and hated injustice and exploitation." But he felt that Mark Twain was unequipped to be an effective satirist: ". . . he had no coherent social philosophy, . . . no capacity for abstract thought. . . ." "Moreover, he was personally as eager as most other Americans to achieve material success. . . ." Consequently, "Unable to formulate any coherent attitude towards the transformation of American life, he relieved his feelings in books denouncing feudal Europe. . . ." ²⁶⁹

After all these pros and cons, it seems only fair to let Van Wyck Brooks have the last word. Brooks, in a recent brief study, revised several of his earlier ideas.²⁷⁰ Perhaps the best summation of the revised Brooksonian argument was made in a book review by Robert E. Spiller:

He has not changed his mind, but he has changed his values. The old schizophrenic split is still at the heart of this new interpretation, but the anxiety about it is gone. Mark Twain now appears as the greatest of

²⁶⁹Loc. cit.

²⁷⁰Van Wyck Brooks, The Times of Melville and Whitman (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1947), pp. 283-300. Many years earlier Brooks had revised The Ordeal of Mark Twain (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1933), 325 pp. Although the book omitted a few derogatory references to Olivia Clemens, adopted a more conservative tone by changing some of the positive statements to relative ones, and added a few more details, the theory that Twain had a balked personality remained essentially the same as in the 1920 edition.

recognized that Twain's...
hated injustice and exploitation...
Twain was unapologetic to be an effective writer...
had no coherent social philosophy...
abstract thought...
error as most other Americans to achieve financial success...
... "Consequently, Twain's...
titled towards the transformation of American literature...
lived his feelings in books and stories...
after all those years and doubt, it seems only fair to

Let Van Wyck Brooks save the last word...
cent brief study, tested...
Perhaps the best...
was made in a book review by...
He has not changed his mind...
valued. The old...
heart of this new...
it is gone. This book...

260
1925

Twain's...
(New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1925)...
Many years earlier Brooks had written...
Twain (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1925)...
Although the book...
Olivia Clemens...
some of the positive...
a few more details...
sensitivity remained...
edition.

our folk-artists, the most versatile of our local colorists, a Don Quixote in the rusty armor of Southern chivalry, and a sellout to Andrew Carnegie.²⁷¹

Now realizing the importance and the enriching qualities of the frontier on Mark Twain's development as an artist,²⁷² Brooks also, and at long last, admitted that Twain was often downright funny!²⁷³ Although he still believed that Twain's early Calvinistic training and later genteel environment inhibited his presentations,²⁷⁴ and that these works were always strongly censored, he did admit, however, that most of the censorship was voluntary.²⁷⁵ Brooks, despite his condescensions, still could not wholly praise Twain because he had not helped give America a national literature. His supposed cultural independence, exemplified best in Innocents Abroad, was merely cultural ignorance. Brooks believed that Emerson and Hawthorne both helped develop a national literature, but that Twain actually made few contributions to it.²⁷⁶

²⁷¹Robert E. Spiller, "The Times of Melville and Whitman," American Literature, XX (January, 1949), 459-61.

²⁷²Brooks, The Times of Melville and Whitman, op. cit., p. 284.

²⁷³Ibid., p. 296.

²⁷⁴Ibid., p. 290.

²⁷⁵Ibid., p. 285.

²⁷⁶Ibid., pp. 295-96.

our folk-artists, the most versatile of our folk-artists, a man whose art is the folk-art of the folk-artists, and a man whose art is the folk-art of the folk-artists.

Now realizing the importance of the folk-artists, the frontier on which the folk-artists have been working, Brooks also, and at the same time, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

downright theory, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

early Calvinistic training and later contact with the folk-artists, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

hit his presentation, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

strenuously censored, he did not, however, regard the folk-artists as censored, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

censorship was voluntary, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

alone, still could not wholly release their folk-artists, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

helped the folk-artists, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

cultural independence, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

was merely cultural independence, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

and Hawthorne both helped develop a national literature, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

that Twain actually made the folk-artists, the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists, and the folk-artists have been working on the folk-art of the folk-artists.

Robert R. Chiles, "The Folk-Art of the Folk-Artists," *American Literature*, 1931, 1: 1-11.

Brooks, "The Folk-Art of the Folk-Artists," *American Literature*, 1931, 1: 1-11.

- 276 *ibid.*, p. 1-11.
- 277 *ibid.*, p. 1-11.
- 278 *ibid.*, p. 1-11.
- 279 *ibid.*, p. 1-11.

Thus we have seen the gradual development of Mark Twain criticism, as shown in this representative sampling of critical attitudes. Twain, once merely the "jolly-joker," and not considered a great literary figure, underwent a revival which placed him near the top of American letters. The inevitable reaction followed, and now it appears that Mark Twain has dropped a few notches into a more appropriate position in American literature. Critics, aligning themselves with either Van Wyck Brooks or Bernard DeVoto, have fought (at times acrimoniously) over Mark Twain until it has become difficult to separate the accurate critical judgments from the biased prejudices and a priori theories.

The second broad purpose of this thesis will be to look at the record, as Wagenknecht did in his penetrating study, and see how far Mark Twain really went in social criticism. This will also show which of the many critical ideas held toward Mark Twain seems most accurate today.

Thus we have seen the gradual development of
Twain criticism, a growth which has been the result
of critical studies. It was not until the late
and not considered a first in literary history. Twain
revival which placed him near the top of American literature.
The inevitable reaction followed, and in response to
Mark Twain has dropped a low note as there is some question
position in American literature. Twain, at least, has
himself with other American writers in the past, but
thought of him as a second (and inferior) to the first.
become difficult to separate the personal criticism from
from the biased prejudice and a study of Twain's
The second broad purpose of this criticism is to
look at the record as Twain himself has made it.
study, and see how far Twain really went in social
criticism. This will show what value to the many critical
ideas held to have Mark Twain's ideas and literary record.

CHAPTER II

WARS

Since a moot question in criticism of Mark Twain is the extent to which his talent and interest turned toward social criticism, it is pertinent to examine the record, and ascertain how much social criticism Mark Twain expressed. One of the first and most interesting aspects to be considered is his attitude toward both war in general and wars in particular.

I. WAR IN GENERAL

In Mark Twain's lifetime the United States was a participant in three wars, and neutral during several others. Military conflicts in Twain's lifetime were often topics of national importance, and furnished much material for literary men. Twain's attitudes toward the various wars are more interesting, and often more puzzling, than those of many other American writers. On war, as on almost every other subject, Twain was annoyingly inconsistent. Sometimes the violence of his jingoistic tirades made it seem that Twain was ready to join the fight personally. At other times he was savage in his denunciation of war, while on still other occasions he blandly ignored wars, as if they simply did not exist.

Whether this silence was the result of an ivory tower or isolationist attitude, a desire not to become involved in highly partisan discussions for personal reasons, or merely a lack of interest on Twain's part, it is one of the most interesting questions in this investigation.

There were times when the brutality of war almost sickened Twain. Realizing that the course of all history had been one of perpetual strife, Twain had Satan say, in The Mysterious Stranger, "And always we had wars, and more wars, and still other wars--all over Europe, all over the world."¹ Satan then showed the future which contained "... slaughters more terrible in their destruction of life, more devastating in their engines of war, than any we had seen."² Progress was merely the invention of weapons more deadly than ever before known. War was inevitable, as long as the human race remained on earth.

Although the accuracy of the following passage about Twain's Civil War experiences has been disproved, the feeling and general attitude toward war can be considered his own:

¹Samuel L. Clemens, The Portable Mark Twain, Bernard DeVoto, editor (New York: The Viking Press, 1946), p. 718.

²Loc. cit.

Whether this silence was the result of a lack of interest in the subject, or a lack of interest in the subject, it is not clear. The fact is that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion, and it is interesting to note that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion.

There were also other reasons for the silence. The fact is that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion, and it is interesting to note that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion.

The fact is that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion, and it is interesting to note that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion.

Although the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion, it is interesting to note that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion.

The fact is that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion, and it is interesting to note that the subject is highly pertinent to the present discussion.

Doc. 111.

In a little while the man was dead. He was killed in war, killed in fair and legitimate war. . . . The thought of him got to preying upon me every night; I could not drive it away, the taking of that unoffending life seemed such a wanton thing. And it seemed an epitome of war, that all war must be just that the killing of strangers against whom you feel no personal animosity. . . . My campaign was spoiled. It seemed to me that I was not rightly equipped for this awful business. . . . I resolved to retire from this avocation of sham soldiery while I could save some remnant of my self-respect.³

Huck Finn's feelings closely paralleled these, despite his rough and ready outdoor life, and they too can safely be interpreted as Twain's own. Wagenknecht remarked, concerning Huck's attitude toward the Shepherdson-Grangerford feud:

His instinctive, personal reaction to war is one of intense aversion always. Huck Finn turns physically sick at the sight of the feud, disgusted by the slaughter and killing practiced by the damned human race.⁴

At times Twain had a keen sense of the preciousness of life, and nowhere was he more bitter in the denunciation of war than in his "War Prayer:

O Lord our Father, our young patriots, idols of our hearts, go forth to battle--be Thou near them! With them, in spirit, we also go forth from the sweet peace of our beloved firesides to smite the foe. O Lord our God, help us to tear their soldiers to bloody shreds with our shells; help us to cover their smiling fields with the pale forms of their patriot dead; help us to drown the thunder of the guns with the shrieks of their wounded writhing in pain; help us to lay waste their humble

³Clemens, "The Private History of a Campaign that Failed," The Portable Mark Twain, op. cit., pp. 138-39.

⁴Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 257.

homes with a hurricane of fire; help us to wring the hearts of their unoffending widows with unavailing grief; help us to turn them out roofless with their little children to wander unfriended the wastes of their desolated land in rags and hunger and thirst, . . . broken in spirit, worn with travail, imploring Thee for the refuge of the grave and denied it--for our sakes who adore Thee, Lord, blast their hopes, blight their lives, protract their bitter pilgrimage, make heavy their steps, water their way with their tears, stain the white snow with the blood of their wounded feet!⁵

Wagenknecht summed up Twain's attitude toward war when he mentioned that Franklin D. Roosevelt took his "New Deal" phrase from Mark Twain:

He [Twain] would be in favor of a "New Deal" and yet a newer "New Deal" among the sons of men, and if the day comes when we have a warless world, then, at last, the boy from Hannibal will take his place among the prophets.⁶

Yet this great humanitarian was more than ready to advance the cause of certain specific conflicts. In fact, there were times, especially at the outbreak of the Spanish American War, when he thought the American cause just, holy, and utterly noble. Despite his generalizations against war, he could seem, at times, almost bloodthirsty. If there was to be progress in the world, blood must be shed. Although Twain's favorite heroine, Joan of Arc, shrank from the sight of blood, and on one occasion wept while sitting among a

⁵Clemens, "The War Prayer," The Portable Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 582.

⁶Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 265.

pile of corpses because she could not help thinking about the bereaved mothers, yet Joan of Arc's battles were holy because progress was being made in the direction of freedom.⁷ "The Boss," in the Connecticut Yankee once said on this topic:

. . . All gentle cant and philosophizing to the contrary notwithstanding, no people in the world ever did achieve their freedom by goody-goody talk and moral suasion; it being immutable law that all revolutions that will succeed must begin in blood, whatever may answer afterward. If history teaches anything, it teaches that. What this folk needed, then, was a Reign of Terror and a guillotine. . . .⁸

The few references that Twain ever made to the French Revolution were of this type. War was evil, but on occasions it could be the lesser of two evils:

There were two "Reigns of Terror," if we would but remember it and consider it; the one wrought murder in hot passion, the other in heartless cold blood; the one lasted mere months, the other had lasted a thousand years; the one inflicted death upon ten thousand persons, the other upon a hundred millions; but our shudders are all for the "horrors" of the minor Terror, the momentary Terror, so to speak; whereas, what is the horror of swift death by the ax compared with lifelong death from hunger, cold, insult, cruelty, and heart-break?⁹

Many of the English Romantics at first supported the French

⁷Samuel L. Clemens, Personal Recollections of Joan of Arc, (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1899), I, 239.

⁸Samuel L. Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court (Garden City: Garden City Publishing Company, 1939), p. 741.

⁹Ibid., p. 708.

pile of corpses because the world was only a few days
the bereaved mother, the father of the fallen soldier
because progress was being made in the direction of peace.
"The Boss" in the "International" paper once said in this

topic:

... All people are not alike. Some are the honest
notwithstanding, no matter in the world, the honest
their freedom to work, to live, and to be free
being impossible for all the nations that will not
need most being in the world. The world is not free
it history, freedom, and peace. It is the world that
folk needed, and was a failure of power and justice
time.

The two references of the world are in the world.

Revolution were the world's revolution.

it could be the world's revolution.

There were two world's revolution.

member of the world's revolution.

not passed, the world's revolution.

lasted more than the world's revolution.

years, the world's revolution.

sons, the world's revolution.

have also all for the world's revolution.

momentary power, the world's revolution.

horror of the world's revolution.

death from hunger, cold, and misery.

Many of the world's revolution.

... the world's revolution.

... the world's revolution.

... the world's revolution.

... the world's revolution.

... the world's revolution.

Revolution, but later repudiated the cause when cruelty and bloodshed went too far. Yet Twain always felt the Revolution did more good than harm, and even as late as 1889 said it was ". . . next to the 4th of July and its results. . . the noblest and holiest thing and the most precious thing that ever happened in this earth."¹⁰ Perhaps Twain never looked closely at the French Revolution, or never thought deeply about it. One of his major defects was making snap judgments without deep thought. Possessor of a relatively undisciplined mind, Twain seldom thought things out or traced incidents back to their sources, and relied more upon sentiment and emotions than upon intellect.

One could be reasonably sure that when Twain did oppose a war, the conflict was far away, either in space or time, and usually did not concern him personally. If the United States was not involved, he could be smugly moral. If some downtrodden minority was being cruelly oppressed, Twain's protests were vehement. These facts will be shown in the more detailed discussion of several specific wars.

II. THE MEXICAN WAR

In Mark Twain's voluminous writings this is almost

¹⁰Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 260.

Revolution, but later regretted the course which it
 and bloodshed went too far. Yet these things were
 Revolution did some good things, and even as late as 1960
 said it was "... next to the 14th of July and the Bastille ...
 the noblest and holiest thing and the most precious thing that
 ever happened in this century. ... Perhaps this never happened
 closely at the French Revolution, or never thought deeply
 about it. One of his major defects was making such
 sense without deep thought. Possession of a relatively un-
 disciplined mind, this golden thought. When in a
 incidents back to their sources, and relied upon their senti-
 ment and emotion. One reason that this
 one could be so sure that this was the
 pose a set, the country was in a state of
 time, and usually did not consider it the
 United States was not involved, he could be easily misled.
 It some doubtless directly and being cruelly oppressed,
 twin's protests were vehement. These facts will be known
 in the more detailed discussion of western society.

II. THE MEXICAN CASE

In Mark Twain's explanation of the situation in Mexico

Washington, D.C. July 10, 1900

all he ever said about the Mexican War:

Then came the Mexican War. . . . A company of infantry was raised in our town and Mr. Hickman, a tall, straight, handsome athlete of twenty-five, was made captain of it and had a sword by his side and a broad yellow stripe down the leg of his gray uniform pants. And when that company marched back and forth through the streets in its smart uniforms--which it did several times a day for drill--its evolutions were attended by all the boys whenever school hours permitted. I can see that marching company yet, and I can almost feel again the consuming desire that I had to join it. But they had no use for boys of twelve and thirteen, and before I had a chance in another war the desire to kill people to whom I had not been introduced had passed away.¹¹

Albert Bigelow Paine stated that during the close of the Mexican War Twain ". . . was given charge of the extras with news from the front. . . ." ¹² and that ". . . the burning importance of his mission, the bringing of news hot from the field of battle, spurred him to endeavors that won plaudits and success." ¹³ DeLancey Ferguson, however, checking details more closely, stated that ". . . Chapultapec, the last major battle of the war, was fought less than six months after John Clemens died. Hence Sam, instead of printing the extras,

¹¹Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, Albert Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1924), II, 216.

¹²Albert Bigelow Paine, Mark Twain, A Biography (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1912), I, 78.

¹³Loc. cit.

all his ever said about the American war.

Then came the American war. . . . I remember at that time
was raised in my town and I, Richard, a little boy, was
hundreds of miles from home. I was a soldier of the
and had a sword by his side and a sword by his side.
down the line of his army uniform. . . . I was a
company member. . . . I was a soldier of the
the army. . . . I was a soldier of the
drill. . . . I was a soldier of the
whenever school hours passed. . . . I was a soldier of the
my company. . . . I was a soldier of the
my desire that I had to join it. . . . I was a soldier of the
for boys of twelve and thirteen. . . . I was a soldier of the
in another way the desire to kill people. . . . I was a soldier of the
not been instructed and passed away.

Albert Einstein later stated that during the war of 1914-1918
I was given a sword by the American war.

EFFICIENCY

ERASE BOND

RAC CONTENT

importance of the
field of battle, . . .
and success. . . .
more closely, stated that . . .
battle of the war, was fought in the same spirit
John C. Calhoun said. . . .

1. . . .
Albert Einstein later stated that during the war of 1914-1918
and success. . . .

2. . . .
Albert Einstein later stated that during the war of 1914-1918
York and London. . . .

1914-1918

only delivered them. . . ." ¹⁴ because his apprenticeship to Joseph P. Ament had not yet begun.

Twain had little to say about this war, one of the most unjust campaigns ever carried on by the United States. President James K. Polk, his eyes fixed upon the Mexican land of California, probably sought war with Mexico, and ordered General Zachary Taylor, in Texas, to cross the Nueces River into Mexico. Polk then declared war, theoretically because minister John Slidell had not been received by the Mexicans. General Taylor, however, had invaded Mexico before war was actually declared. The war was soon over, and as a result of the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, February 2, 1848, Mexico ceded California, Texas, and the New Mexico Territory. This land now comprises roughly one quarter of the present area of the United States.

In addition to sheer imperialism, one of the motives behind the annexation was the prospective addition of more slave states to the Union. A controversial storm developed, and while Southern states thought the move a glorious chapter in the history of the country, Northerners, among them James Russell Lowell, bitterly castigated the action. The war was highly popular, however, in the Mississippi Valley,

¹⁴Ferguson, op. cit., p. 33.

because the settlers there dreamed of vast new wealth to be had on a new frontier.¹⁵

It might seem strange to note that although the Mexican War was popular with the Mississippi Valley residents, Mark Twain remained almost completely silent. It should be noted, however, that Twain was only thirteen years old at the time. During the war Twain visualized nothing but the pomp, glory, and ceremony of the conflict. When he matured, the Civil War was rapidly approaching, and there were more important things than the Mexican War to talk about. Under no circumstances can Twain be censured simply because of the infrequency of references in his writings to the Mexican War.

One can, however, wonder why he remained so silent about it in later years when he openly criticized many wars of aggression, some of which were long since over. The tempting conclusion is a somewhat Brooksian idea that Twain had a guilty conscience, because he himself rambled about for years in that territory virtually stolen from Mexico. Had the United States not taken this land, he would never have had the opportunity to seek his fortune in Washoe. The land was as important to him as it was to all the other speculators who flocked there. Some weight is added to this

¹⁵Samuel Eliot Morison and Henry Steele Commager, The Growth of the American Republic (New York: Oxford University Press, 1942), I, 592.

because the authors there present it as a new frontier.
It might seem a paradox to have the authors of the

lean war was popular with the industrial nations, especially
Mark Twain remained almost completely silent. It is possible
noted, however, that Twain was not a pacifist. He was
the time. During the war Twain witnessed nothing but the
poor, glory, and heroism of the soldiers. He believed
the Civil War was really a struggle, and that was the
important thing. The authors of the book are not

no circumstances can be said to be a new frontier. It is
infrequency of reference in the history of the
war.

One can, however, wonder why the authors of the book
about it in later years when he openly admitted his
of aggression, some of which were fought over. The
tempting conclusion is a somewhat mistaken one. It is
had a early conscience, because he himself realized that
for years in that territory. It is a mistake to say
Had the United States not taken this land, it would never
have had the opportunity to see the future in the
land was as important as it was to the other
speculators who looked there. Some people are

1st edition, 1902, by the author and Henry James. The
Growth of the American Novel, 1902, by the author.

theory when one considers that whereas he often spoke of minority groups or races in the West, he never mentioned the numerous Spanish or Mexicans.

Theorizing, however interesting, is not sound scholarship, and Twain cannot be chided for a lack of social consciousness on this point. Twain said next to nothing about the Mexican War, but under the circumstances said as much as he (or any other average man) might have been expected to say.

III. THE CIVIL WAR

Much more puzzling than Mark Twain's silence about the Mexican War was his reaction to the Civil War. Again there was a marked degree of reticence, but this time on a topic of prime importance. His one literary work dealing specifically with the Civil War was "The Private History of a Campaign That Failed," and that might never have been written had not the Keokuk Gate City subtly questioned Twain's war record after he had lectured there in 1885.¹⁶ It is quite possible that Twain, with little delay, composed this burlesque sketch before any insidious rumors

¹⁶Fred W. Lorch, "Mark Twain and the 'Campaign That Failed,'" American Literature, XII (January, 1941), 463.

theory when one considers that whereas the white race is
minority groups or races in the West, the negro race is
numerous Spanish or Mexican.

Theory, however, is not enough. It is not enough to
ship, and Train cannot be called for a lack of
evidence on this point. Train is next to nothing
the Mexican war, but under the circumstances and as
as he for any other average man might have been expected to
say.

III. THE TRUTH

Much more puzzling than the Train's silence about
the Mexican War was the reaction to the 1891 war. There
there was a marked degree of silence, but this time on
topic of prime importance. The one literary man dealing
specifically with the Civil War was the history of
a Campaign That Failed, "and which might have been
written had not the Booker T. Washington been
Train's war record after he had returned there in 1891.
It is quite possible that Train will find this
posed this burlesque sketch before any finished version

Typed at home, May 1911 and the 1911
That Failed, "American Literature, Vol. 1, 1911, 1911.
1911.

could begin attacking his high reputation.

Many of the Mark Twain critics have passed over his Civil War experiences either summarily or almost contemptuously. Edgar Lee Masters said Twain went West in 1861 because he foresaw conscription and wanted to avoid it. All he was interested in was making money.¹⁷ Van Wyck Brooks claimed, "Mark Twain's brief career as a soldier exhibited, as we see, just the characteristics of a 'throw-back,' a reversion to a previous infantile frame of mind."¹⁸ Floyd Stovall believed Twain went West because he found military life too unexciting;¹⁹ Fred Lewis Pattee merely mentioned that Twain spent ". . . a few weeks in a self-recruited troop that fell to pieces before it could join the Confederate army. . . ." ²⁰ Carl Van Doren spoke cursorily of Twain's ". . . brief period of comically bloodless service in the Confederate army,"²¹ and added elsewhere, "He joined a volunteer company of young enthusiasts who were not quite sure which side they meant to choose and who broke

¹⁷Masters, op. cit., p. 36.

¹⁸Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 53.

¹⁹Stovall, op. cit., p. 112.

²⁰Pattee, History of American Literature Since 1870, op. cit., p. 49.

²¹Van Doren, The American Novel 1789-1939, op. cit., p. 140.

could begin attacking his right flank.

Many of the men were killed and the rest were

driven off by the superior fire of the British.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Because he was killed, the British were able to

take the city of Corunna without further delay.

Brooks claimed that the British were not

exhausted, as we saw, but the British were

back, a reversal of the previous situation.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

Major-General Sir John Moore was killed on the 16th.

up as soon as the war took on professional aspects."²²

Even Albert Bigelow Paine tended to look lightly upon Twain's Civil War experiences, for he had said:

A good many companies were forming in and about Hannibal, and sometimes purposes were conflicting and badly mixed. Some of the volunteers did not know for a time which invader they intended to drive from Missouri soil, and more than one company in the beginning was made up of young fellows whose chief ambition was to have a lark regardless as to which cause they might eventually espouse.²³

Recent scholars have, as accurately as may ever be expected, outlined Twain's military activities before he left for the West. The short series of "Quintus Curtius Snodgrass" letters, now presumed to have been written by Twain, deal partly with Confederate military drills in and around New Orleans. Ernest E. Leisy said, ". . . It appears not unlikely that Clemens, though not formally enlisted in the Confederate service in Louisiana, may have drilled for

²²Van Doren, "Mark Twain," Dictionary of American Biography, op. cit., IV, 193.

²³Paine, op. cit., I, 163. Cyril Clemens, who has been amazingly inaccurate as a Mark Twain critic, added some readable but utterly false information about Twain's Civil War days: "When the Civil War destroyed all river traffic, Sam joined a Confederate cavalry regiment, and after a while drifted into the river service of the Confederacy. In a few months he was captured by a Federal force and imprisoned in a tobacco warehouse at St. Louis. He managed to escape from prison and joined his elder brother, Orion, who edited a paper at Keokuk, Iowa." From Cyril Clemens, "Mark Twain: 1835-1910," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 103.

up as soon as the war look on professional aspects.²²
 Even Albert Einstein failed to look lightly upon Twain's
 Civil War experience. For he had said:

A good many companies were taken in and about
 handled, and sometimes purposes were conflicting and
 badly mixed. Some of the volunteers did not know for
 a time which direction they intended to drive from
 Missouri soil, and some had one company in the de-
 signing was made up of young fellows whose chief in-
 dition was to have a lack of regard as to which
 cause they might eventually support.²³

Recent scholars have, as accurately as may ever be
 expected, outlined Twain's military activities before he
 left for the West. The short series of "Gentle Curious
 Snodgrass" letters, now presumed to have been written by
 Twain, deal partly with Confederate military drills in and
 around New Orleans. Ernest H. Lohr said, "It appears
 not unlikely that elements, though not formally enlisted in
 the Confederate service in Louisiana, may have drilled for

²² Van Doren, "Mark Twain," Bibliography of American
 Literature, op. cit., IV, 193.

²³ Twain, op. cit., I, 163. Cyril Clemens, who has
 been amazingly inaccurate as a Mark Twain critic, added some
 readable but utterly false information about Twain's Civil
 War days: "When the Civil War destroyed all river traffic, and
 joined a Confederate cavalry regiment, and after a while
 drifted into the river service of the Confederacy. In a few
 months he was captured by a Federal force and imprisoned in
 a tobacco warehouse at St. Louis. He managed to escape from
 prison and joined his elder brother, Orion, who edited a
 paper at Keokuk, Iowa." From Cyril Clemens, "Mark Twain:
 1835-1910," Oversand Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 102.

a short time with some informal military unit in New Orleans."²⁴ DeLancey Ferguson said basically the same thing, and added, "The satire upon the ways of drill sergeants and the fatigue of standing at parade rest has a specific quality which suggests firsthand knowledge."²⁵ Ferguson pointed out with assurance that Twain's dislike of the drills would have been obvious: "He was always physically indolent except when he was doing things he enjoyed, and taking orders would be particularly distasteful to a pilot who had been in the habit of giving them."²⁶

The series of letters was short-lived, and Twain's military experiences around New Orleans could not have been more than haphazard. There was no sustained or profound social criticism in these letters, and the experiences seemed to have been more of a lark than anything else.²⁷

Twain returned from New Orleans a few days after Lincoln issued his first call for troops.²⁸ At that time St.

²⁴Samuel L. Clemens, The Letters of Quintus Curtius Snodgrass, Ernest E. Leisy, editor (Dallas: Southern Methodist University Press, 1946), p. ix.

²⁵Ferguson, op. cit., p. 60.

²⁶Loc. cit.

²⁷Perhaps Twain's lack of social consciousness on this point is not as strange as it seems. George H. Devol, in his autobiographical book, Forty Years a Gambler on the Mississippi (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1926), pp. 123-26, said he participated in the same drills, and took the same skylarking attitude toward them.

²⁸Ferguson, op. cit., p. 61.

a short time with some informal military unit in the Or-
 leans." ²⁴ Delaney Ferguson said basically the same thing,
 and added, "The active upon the way of drill commands and
 the feature of standing at parade rest has a specific qual-
 ity which suggests firsthand knowledge." ²⁵ Ferguson pointed
 out with assurance that Twain's dislike of the drill would
 have been obvious: "He was always physically indolent except
 when he was doing things he enjoyed, and taking orders would
 be particularly distasteful to a pilot who had been in the

habit of giving them." ²⁶

The series of letters was short-lived, and Twain's
 military experiences around New Orleans could not have been
 more than haphazard. There was no sustained or organized
 social criticism in these letters, and the experiences seemed
 to have been more of a jolt than anything else. ²⁷

Twain returned from New Orleans a few days after Jan-
 uary issued his first call for troops. ²⁸ At that time

²⁴ Samuel L. Clemens, The Letters of William Dean Howells,
 Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1909, p. 10.

²⁵ Ferguson, op. cit., p. 80.

²⁶ ibid.

²⁷ Perhaps Twain's lack of social consciousness on this
 point is not as strange as it seems. George H. Davis, in his
 autobiographical book, Forty Years a Bachelor (New York:
 Henry Holt and Company, 1920), pp. 12-13, said
 he participated in the same drill, and took the same milita-
 ry attitude toward them.

²⁸ Ferguson, op. cit., p. 81.

Louis was seething with divided sentiment, and there were several disturbances, all of which Twain undoubtedly knew of, as he was then receiving Masonic orders in St. Louis.²⁹

When Twain returned to Hannibal, he again found wavering sentiment. Strongly pro-Southern a few weeks before, the town had suddenly become ardently pro-Union.³⁰ Twain soon set out with a group, much like Tom Sawyer's "band," and, like many other Missouri "volunteers" at that time, prowled about in highly disorganized fashion for a while. Orion Clemens, in the meantime, had received his appointment as Secretary of the Washoe Territory, and before long Twain left his marauding band in order to go West with Orion.

Many critics have dealt harshly with Twain on this desertion of military duty. Even Wagenknecht, who tried not to criticize Twain on this point, had to admit:

Absence of purpose stands out clearly. . . . Mark Twain has done no coherent or consecutive thinking either about war in general or about this war in particular. He was never very clear about the Civil War, not even as he considered it retrospectively in later years. . . . Sam Clemens was supremely uninterested in the great problems involved. . . .³¹

Fred Lorch was another critic who, although he vehemently

²⁹Loc. cit.

³⁰Loc. cit.

³¹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 252.

Louis was meeting the other... several... as he was then receiving... When Twain returned to Hannibal, he... statement. Strongly pro-Southern... had suddenly become... with a groan, such like... other Missouri... highly disorganized... the machine, had received... the Washoe Territory, the... the band is... these... detection of... to criticize Twain on... absence of purpose... has done no... about war in... He was never... as he... Ben... Iowa... Fred... 20... 30... 31...

denied that Twain went West merely for gold, had to admit that Twain's war record was slightly tainted.³² But perhaps there were extenuating circumstances. As has been pointed out, St. Louis, Hannibal, and all Missouri were seething with divided sentiment. In an area so unsettled about the great problems facing the country, is it any wonder that Twain, whose thoughts were always swayed strongly by his unstable emotions, was not able to reach any definite conclusions about the War? Then too, he had virtually no alternative but to head West. The river was closed except to military boats, and the pay there was markedly less than on the commercial boats.³³ Piloting for either army was extremely hazardous, and Twain had said frankly: "I'm not very anxious to get up in a glass perch and be shot at by either side. I'll go home and reflect on the matter."³⁴ While in the Army, Twain experienced several weeks of extreme discomfort from heavy rains, and found the nearby residents none too friendly.³⁵ Further army life would have been utterly unbearable for as irresponsible a man as Twain. In addition, he, more than

³²Lorch, "Mark Twain and the 'Campaign That Failed,'" op. cit., 470.

³³Ibid., p. 464.

³⁴Paine, op. cit., I, 161.

³⁵Ferguson, op. cit., p. 62.

denied that Tustin was not really for... that Tustin's was... there were... out, St. Louis, Kansas, and... divided... problems facing the country... whose... emotions, was not able to... about the West. Then too, he... to head West. The river was... and the... west... and Tustin said... in a class... and reflect on the... performed several... trains, and found the... further... irresponsible...

March, West Tustin and the...
...
...
...
...

many human beings, would not have been able to kill in warfare. Always extremely sensitive, Twain hid under a gruff exterior an intense dislike of hurting anything or anyone. Despite his many verbal battles, Twain never resorted to physical violence. This becomes even more significant when one considers the years he spent in the lawless Washoe Territory. Consequently, it seems probable that Twain, whose ideas on the war were not yet formed, found good jobs scarce on the river, military life unbearable, and the thought of killing friends and neighbors unthinkable. When Orion headed for Washoe, he succeeded in getting Twain, after considerable coaxing and urging,³⁶ to accompany him into the West, where a life more satisfying than along the Mississippi might be possible.

Many critics have taken the attitude that when Twain accompanied Orion to Washoe, he left the Civil War far behind him, because in all Twain's voluminous writings there were no references to the Civil War in Washoe. A closer look, however, at life in Washoe shows that Civil War feeling ran extremely high, and that the Territory was not so divorced from the war as many people thought.

California, adjoining Washoe, remained a trouble spot until 1865, and "Secret Southern organizations flour-

³⁶Lorch, "Mark Twain and the 'Campaign That Failed,'" op. cit., 464.

many human beings, would not have been able to kill in war.
Tate. Always extremely sensitive, Tate hid under a great
exterior an intense dislike of hurting anyone or anyone.
Despite his many verbal battles, Tate never resorted to
physical violence. This becomes even more significant when
one considers the years he spent in the Jewish ghetto Ter-
ritory. Consequently, it seems probable that Tate, whose
ideas on the war were not yet formed, found good jobs
on the river, military life unbearable, and the thought of
killing friends and neighbors unbearable. When Tate
headed for Warsaw, he succeeded in getting Tate, after con-
siderable coaxing and urging, to accompany him into the
East, where a life more satisfying than along the Mississippi
might be possible.

Many critics have taken the attitude that when Tate
accompanied Tate to Warsaw, he left the Civil War far be-
hind him, because in all Tate's voluminous writings there
were no references to the Civil War in Warsaw. A closer
look, however, at life in Warsaw shows that Civil War was
ing too extremely high, and that the Territory was not so
divorced from the war as many people thought.

California, adjoining Warsaw, remained a frontier
spot until 1865, and "Secret Southern organizations flour-

ished in California cities and mining camps."³⁷ The Piute Indian War of 1860 had brought hundreds of pro-slavery men to Washoe; they arrived to fight the Indians, but they remained to help the Confederate cause.³⁸ For a time it looked as though Washoe would go Confederate, but thanks principally to lawyer Bill Stewart, who forced Confederate legal authorities to resign and thus promoted Union sentiment, Washoe was preserved for the Union, and eventually became the new state of Nevada.³⁹ Nevada soon became of vital importance to the Union, because of the fabulously rich ore found there. This wealth was important in financing the Civil War.⁴⁰

The Civil War was not a forgotten topic in Washoe. When Governor James W. Nye arrived in Carson City, July 8, 1861, he said to the townspeople:

Allow me to assure you that not one star shall be permitted to be removed from the old (34). Twenty-five million freemen will not permit it. And I have come here to this distant country with the hope of adding one more--a bright and glorious star--Nevada.⁴¹

³⁷Effie Mona Mack, Mark Twain in Nevada (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1947), pp. 112.

³⁸Ibid., p. 116.

³⁹Loc. cit.

⁴⁰Jack Frank, "Sin or Scenery," Rocky Mountain Empire Magazine Supplement, The Denver Post, (November 7, 1948), 5.

⁴¹Mack, op. cit., p. 66.

issued in California cities and other towns.

Indian War of 1855 had brought hundreds of frontiersmen

to Washoe; they arrived in 1855 and 1856, and the

mained to help the Government.

as though Washoe would be a successful

to lawyer Bill Stewart, who would have been

ities to resist and then promote their settlement.

was preserved for the Union, and eventually passed the

State of Nevada.

to the Union, because of the similarity with the

there. This vessel was reported as being in the

war.

The Civil War was not a large one for

When Governor James W. W. was elected in 1855

1861, he said to the Legislature:

Allow me to assure you that our first duty

will be to defend the Union, and the

million people will not be able to

here to this distant country with the

one more—a bright and shining star.

Charles Johnston's name is on the list

of the

of the

of the

of the

On the west side of the Humboldt Mountains a town sprang up early in 1861. Named "Dixie" by the Confederate sympathizers there because of Southern military successes in 1861, the town soon became a center of violent controversy. Finally an election was held, and the name changed to "Unionville," and the largest American flag obtainable was flown from a gigantic flagpole in the center of the town.⁴² When the transcontinental telegraph was completed in 1861, the Washoe Territorial Legislature sent the first telegram back East as a greeting to President Lincoln on October 23, 1861:

Nevada for the Union, ever true and loyal! The last born of the nation will be the last to desert the flag! Our aid, to the extent of our ability, can be relied upon to crush the rebellion.⁴³

One of the last outbursts of secession sympathy in Washoe occurred in Carson City, November 29, 1861. A group of guerrillas planned to assume control of all the mines. One of their outlaw leaders, Bill Mayfield, stabbed an officer in a saloon. In the ensuing turmoil, troops were called out to prevent an actual Secessionist rebellion.⁴⁴ Almost two years later, in the summer of 1863, Governor Nye unwittingly appointed several Secessionists to county

⁴²Ibid., p. 129.

⁴³Ibid., p. 123.

⁴⁴Ibid., pp. 117-19.

On the west side of the ...
up early in 1861. ...
pathfinders there ...
1861, the town ...
Finally an ...
village, and the ...
from a ...
the transcontinental ...
Nevada Territorial ...
least as a ...

NEVADA

CHAPTER

One of the ...
Nevada ...
of ...
One of ...
floor in a ...
called out to ...
Almost two ...
Nye unwittingly ...

1861, ...
1861, ...
1861, ...

offices, and Orion Clemens was finally forced to remove them after their actions had become dangerous.⁴⁵

Patriotic rallies were held in both Carson and Virginia Cities after Union victories back East, and war feeling ran high:

Although Washoe was several thousand miles away from the thick of the fighting in the Civil War, the people were none the less patriotic in raising money, celebrating Union victories, and in keeping down secessionist sentiment. Every invention was used to raise money for the Sanitary Commission, the Civil War version of the Red Cross. Sanitary balls were given, Sanitary fairs were held, and rich ore was donated, run out into silver bars, and forwarded for this work.⁴⁶

It was during this period that Mark Twain turned to journalism on the Virginia City Enterprise, but did he concern himself with the Civil War? He arrived in Unionville a short four months after the trouble there, but he never mentioned it. He also never mentioned Nevada's entrance into the Union, nor did he concern himself with Orion's dismissal of Secessionists from public office. Twain was in Carson City when Bill Mayfield led a Confederate uprising, but we never hear of that from Twain either. He gave pictures of almost all phases of life in Virginia City, but no scenes of war rallies in celebration of Union victories. He made thirteen trips to San Francisco while he was in

⁴⁵Ibid., p. 308.

⁴⁶Ibid., p. 307.

offices, and Union citizens were finally forced to remove them after their actions had become dangerous. Patriotic rallies were held in both Carson and Virginia Cities after Union victories back East, and war flags

Although Washoe was several thousand miles away from the front of the fighting in the Civil War, the people were none the less patriotic in raising money, celebrating Union victories, and in keeping down secessionist sentiment. Every invention was used to raise money for the Sanitary Commission. The Civil War version of the Red Cross. Sanitary balls were given. Sanitary fairs were held, and rich ones were donated, and all this money was forwarded for this work.

It was during this period that Mark Twain turned to journalism on the Virginia City Enterprise, but did not concern himself with the Civil War. He arrived in Nevada a short time after the trouble there, but he never mentioned it. He also never mentioned Nevada's entrance into the Union, nor did he concern himself with Carson's dismissal of secessionists from public office. Twain was in Carson City when Bill Hayward led a Confederate uprising, but we never hear of that from Twain either. He gave no force of almost all phases of life in Virginia City, and no scenes of war rallies in celebration of Union victories. He made thirteen trips to San Francisco while he was in

Twain, p. 308.

Twain, p. 307.

Washoe,⁴⁷ ample opportunity to have heard about war scares in California, but we hear none of them. During his Washoe days Twain referred to the Civil War only four times, and none of the references are of great importance. Once, recalling a Union victory, Twain spoke (with considerable patriotism) of the American flag gleaming in the sun high atop a nearby mountain while stirring news was coming through on the telegraph.⁴⁸ On another occasion when the Carson City ladies decided to give a ball for the Sanitary Fund, he asked, in his Enterprise column, whether the funds were to go toward those suffering from the war, or to a Miscegenation Society in the East. Ferguson said of this remark: "It was the jest of a Missouri Copperhead; it could not have been worse timed or in worse taste."⁴⁹ A third reference was in a letter to his mother, from Carson City, January 30, 1862, which began with a little four-line poem:

How sleep the brave who sink to rest
Far, far from the battle-field's dreadful array,
With cheerful ease and succulent repast
Now ask the sun to lend his streaming ray.⁵⁰

Fred Lorch questioned Twain's attitude here:

⁴⁷Ibid., p. 231.

⁴⁸Samuel L. Clemens, Roughing It (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1913), II, 146.

⁴⁹Ferguson, op. cit., p. 93.

⁵⁰Fred W. Lorch, "Mark Twain's Trip to Humboldt in 1861," American Literature, X (November, 1938), 345. The original poem, by Campbell, implied that the most noble deed of all was to give one's life for one's country upon the battlefield.

In view of the fact that Sam Clemens had very recently resigned his lieutenantcy in the rebel militia of Missouri, after a brief and inglorious "campaign," and that even before he had left Missouri for the West a number of bloody battles of the Civil War had been fought, does not his poem betray a levity about a deeply serious national crisis that is not altogether commendable even in a humorist?⁵¹

Thus Twain's silence, or occasional joshing demeanor, seems, at first, rather difficult to explain. He, however, explained part of it himself in a letter to the San Francisco Call, from Carson City, November 14, 1863:

It was finally determined that disloyal persons--persons convicted of treason, and persons of lawful age who have voluntarily borne arms, or held civil or military office under the Confederacy--should be deprived of the privileges of voting in the State of Nevada.⁵²

From that and the Union sentiment in Washoe, it now becomes obvious that Twain was virtually forced to keep silent about the war, because he was in no position to do otherwise. Not only his own security, but Orion's was at stake, and had it been shouted about that Twain was a Confederate deserter, the Wild Humorist of the Pacific Slope might never have enjoyed his rousing literary start in the West on the Virginia City Enterprise.

Granting then that Twain was not in much of a position to speak about the Civil War until it had become a thing of

⁵¹Ibid., pp. 344-45.

⁵²Clemens, The Letters of Quintus Curtius Snodgrass, op. cit., p. 69.

In view of the fact that the... resigned his position... after a brief... that even before he... number of... fourth, that his... deeply serious... commendable...

Thus Twain's... at first, rather... claimed part of it... Calif. from...

It was finally... persons... one who have... in many other... deprived of the... Nevada.

from that and the... obvious that... the war, because... only his own... been accused... the Wild... loved his... Cliff...

Standing... to speak...

the past, what was his later attitude toward the conflict? Howells would have us believe that Twain had no qualms over writing about it:

Clemens was entirely satisfied with the result of the Civil War, and he was eager to have its facts and meanings brought out at once in history. He ridiculed the notion, held by many, that "it was not yet time" to philosophize the events of the great struggle; that we must "wait till its passions had cooled," and "the clouds of strife had cleared away." He maintained that the time would never come when we should see its motives and men and deeds more clearly, and that now, now, was the hour to ascertain them in lasting verity.⁵³

Twain, "eager" to have the war written about by American writers, merely mentioned in Life on the Mississippi that Sir Walter Scott's romanticism helped bring on the Civil War, and described a few Civil War scenes along the river.⁵⁴ In A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court he alluded to the Civil War, but was criticizing humanity, not the war. He was speaking of how peasants often kill their fellow men merely on orders from their masters:

It reminded me of a time thirteen centuries away, when the "poor whites" of our South who were always despised and frequently insulted by the slave-lords around them, and who owed their base condition simply to the presence of slavery in their midst, were yet pusillanimously ready to side with the slave-lords in all political moves for the upholding and perpetuating of slavery, and did finally shoulder their muskets and pour out their lives in

⁵³Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 36.

⁵⁴Samuel L. Clemens, Life on the Mississippi (Garden City: Garden City Publishing Company, 1939), pp. 160-63, 178, 200.

an effort to prevent the destruction of that very institution which degraded them.⁵⁵

Twain's "Private History of a Campaign That Failed," mentioned previously, treated the War as a joke. Later, in Following the Equator, Twain again mentioned the War, again comically:

I have seen active service in the field, and it was in the actualities of war that I acquired my training and my right to speak. I served two weeks in the beginning of our Civil War, and during all that time commanded a battery of infantry composed of twelve men. General Grant knew the history of my campaign, for I told it him. I also told him the principle upon which I had conducted it; which was, to tire the enemy. I tired out and disqualified many battalions, yet never had a casualty myself nor lost a man. General Grant was not given to paying compliments, yet he said frankly that if I had conducted the whole war much bloodshed would have been spared, and that what the army might have lost through the inspiring results of collision in the field would have been amply made up by the liberalizing influences of travel.⁵⁶

A final comment on the Civil War was made at a Lincoln's Birthday Celebration in Carnegie Hall, February 11, 1901.

Twain said:

Those were great days, splendid days. What an uprising it was! For the hearts of the whole nation, North and South, were in the war. We of the South were not ashamed; for, like the men of the North, we were fighting for flags we loved; and when men fight for these things, and under these convictions, with nothing sordid to tarnish their cause, that cause is holy, and the blood

⁵⁵Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 807.

⁵⁶Samuel L. Clemens, Following the Equator, A Journey Around the World (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1899), II, 350.

an effort to preserve the independence of that party in
attention which was given to them.

Twain's "Private History of a Campaign That Failed" was

written provisionally, treating the war as a joke. Later, in

Following the Gun, Twain again mentioned the war.

again comically.

I have seen a fine review in the Field of the
in the authorities of war which I should be glad to
and my right to speak. I cannot see how in the
giving of my life, but I shall not do so. I shall
commanded a battery of artillery composed of twelve
men. General Grant was the first to be killed.
for I told it him. I also told him the principles
upon which I had conducted the war. I told him the
energy. I told him the discipline. I told him the
yet never had a cavalry regiment. I told him the
and I told him the discipline. I told him the
in said frankly that if I had conducted the whole war
much bloodshed would have been spared and that the
the end of the war the Union would have been saved
of civilization the Union would have been saved
by the disorganizing influence of war.

A final comment on the Field in the last of a series.

Stephen's Collection in the Field in the last of a series.

Twain said:

Those were great days, splendid days. I shall never
it well. For the people of the world were then
South, were in the war. I shall never see them
shamed; for, like the men of the South, we were
for flags we fought and won. I shall never see them
and under those standards, with nothing to do
tarnish their names, but to be in the war.

Twain's Private History of a Campaign That Failed
First, of all, it is a book.

Twain's Private History of a Campaign That Failed
Among the books that have been written and printed
1895, it is a book.

spilt for it is sacred, the life that is laid down for it is consecrated. To-day we no longer regret the result, to-day we are glad it came out as it did, but we are not ashamed that we did our endeavor; we did our bravest best, against despairing odds, for the cause which was precious to us and which our consciences approved; and we are proud--and you are proud--the kindred blood in your veins answers when I say it--you are proud of the record we made in those mighty collisions in the fields.

What an uprising it was! We did not have to supplicate for soldiers on either side. "We are coming, Father Abraham, three hundred thousand strong!" That was the music North and South. The very choicest young blood and brawn and brain rose up from Maine to the Gulf and flocked to the standards--just as men always do when in their eyes their cause is great and fine and their hearts are in it. . . .⁵⁷

Twain, in 1901, could then afford to sound almost militaristic. But how unlike Twain's contemporary references to the War, or even to Lincoln, who was depicted, in the "Quintus Curtius Snodgrass Letters," as a frontier oaf!⁵⁸

I have quoted Mark Twain's references to the Civil War in their entirety to show his marked silence and seeming lack of concern with the War.⁵⁹ Although considered by many people as the champion of liberty and defender of all oppressed groups, Twain, brought up in a slave-holding state, never favored Abolition or spoke about freeing the slaves

⁵⁷Paine, op. cit., III, 1123-24.

⁵⁸Clemens, The Letters of Quintus Curtius Snodgrass, pp. 45-48.

⁵⁹It is also of interest to note that Twain, a river pilot who undoubtedly heard all the latest news along the Mississippi, and must have heard many stories about the troubles in "Bleeding Kansas" before the Civil War, never once mentioned them in his literary works.

split for it is sacred, the life that is laid down for it is consecrated. To-day we no longer regard the red and, to-day we are glad it came out as it did, but we are not ashamed that we did our endeavor; we did our gravest best, against despairing odds, for the cause which was precious to us and which our consciences approved; and we are proud--and you are proud--the kind blood in your veins answers when I say it--you are proud of the record we made in those eighty collisions in the fields.

What an uprising it was! We did not have to supply a case for soldiers on either side. "We are coming," Father Abraham, three hundred thousand strong! That was the music North and South. The very choicest young blood and brains and brain were up from Maine to the Gulf and flocked to the standards--just as men always do when in their eyes their cause is great and true and their hearts are in it.

Twain, in 1861, could stand aloof to sound almost military tactics. But now unlike Twain's contemporary references to the West, or even to Lincoln, who was depicted, in the "Quintus Curtius Rodgers's letters," as a frontier calf.²⁶

I have quoted Mark Twain's references to the Civil War in their entirety to show his marked silence and seeming lack of concern with the war.²⁷ Although considered by many people as the champion of liberty and defender of all oppressed groups, Twain, brought up in a slave-holding state, never favored abolition or spoke about freeing the slaves.

²⁶Twain, op. cit., III, 1193-4.
²⁷Stemens, The Letters of Captain Quintus Rodgers, pp. 45-48.
²⁸It is also of interest to note that Twain, a writer who undoubtedly heard all the latest news about the Mississippi, and must have heard many stories about the freedmen in "Missouri Kansas," before the Civil War, never once mentioned them in his literary works.

until many years after the War. As has been mentioned, he had a good reason for keeping quiet during the war, but his comparative silence after the War seems to show that if he was a social critic, the Civil War was not a topic with which he concerned himself.

IV. THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR

Mark Twain took a more outspoken attitude toward war when trouble developed with Spain. At first it seemed that the United States was helping a downtrodden minority gain freedom. For many years Cuba had been subjected to harsh and inefficient rule by Spanish military forces. The Cuban Ten Years' War of 1868 to 1878 was ultimately followed by the Cuban War of Independence in 1895. The latter insurrection had been brought about not only by Spanish atrocities (which were magnified by the sensational American press to increase war spirit in the United States), but also by our Wilson Tariff of 1895, which put a stifling duty upon Cuban sugar and caused widespread Cuban poverty. When the American battleship Maine was sunk in Havana, February 15, 1898, American war spirit was fanned to white heat, and President McKinley reluctantly agreed to war. The "war," which lasted ten weeks, was a complete and easy victory for the United States.

Mark Twain's early reaction to the Spanish-American

until many years after his death. He had been a member of the
he had a good reason for leaving and he was not a
his conservative ideas. It was not until after his death
he was a social reformer. The world was not ready for him
which he concerned himself.

IV. THE CHINESE-AMERICAN

When China came to a new republic in 1912, the Chinese
when trouble followed it. It was not until 1911 that
the United States and having a democratic government
freedom. The many years of oppression had been
and finally the Chinese were free. The Chinese
The United States and the Chinese were free. The Chinese
the United States and the Chinese were free. The Chinese
reaction had been strong. The Chinese were free. The Chinese
(which were regarded by the international community as
increase was made in the Chinese Republic. The Chinese
Wilson started at 1912. The Chinese were free. The Chinese
sugar and carried it to the Chinese Republic. The Chinese
bottlenecking. The Chinese were free. The Chinese
American was made and the Chinese were free. The Chinese
McKinley's policy was to give the Chinese. The Chinese
ten weeks. The Chinese were free. The Chinese
States.

After China's entry into the world, the Chinese

War was similar to that of the great majority of Americans, and, like the masses, he was temporarily fooled. Wagenknecht stated, "At the beginning, indeed, he was taken in by it. His chivalry, his sentimentalism, his hatred of monarchy betrayed him."⁶⁰ Wagenknecht also pointed out: "He could not be expected to understand the real importance of Cuban sugar in the American market, nor did he know how effectively a race for newspaper circulation may help to stir up a war."⁶¹

Twain, then, followed the extremely strong war sentiment. Masters criticized this attitude and said:

America needed a satirist to scorch this swinish wallowing in the horrible desecration of the principles of the Republic. Twain was abroad. He was not interested. He was old and enjoying the adoration of Europe.⁶²

It is easy to see, though, why Twain at first believed in the war. He was not bitterly antagonistic to Spain as a nation, or strongly imperialistic. He rejoiced because he thought America was securing liberty for a little nation powerless to obtain freedom unaided.

Living in Vienna at the outbreak of hostilities, Twain found Austria sympathetic with Spain, but his fears that America would act from imperialistic motives were

⁶⁰Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 253.

⁶¹Loc. cit.

⁶²Masters, op. cit., p. 165-66.

relieved when Charles and Jervis Langdon, who arrived in Vienna at this time, brought ". . . straight from America the comforting assurance that the war was not one of conquest or annexation, but a righteous defense of the weak."⁶³ When, shortly after Theodore Stanton invited Twain to the Decoration Day banquet to be held in Paris, he replied:

I thank you very much for your invitation and I would accept it if I were foot-free. For I should value the privilege of helping you do honor to the men who rewelded our broken Union and consecrated their great work with their lives; and also I should like to be there to do homage to our soldiers and sailors of today who are enlisted for another most righteous war, and utter the hope that they may make short and decisive work of it and leave Cuba free and fed when they face for home again.⁶⁴

Twain also wrote to Rev. Joseph Twichell, whose son had enlisted in the Army:

I have never enjoyed a war--even in written history--as I am enjoying this one. For this is the worthiest one that was ever fought, so far as my knowledge goes. It is a worthy thing to fight for one's freedom; it is another sight finer to fight for another man's. And I think this is the first time it has been done.⁶⁵

But as events moved rapidly after the war, his enthusiasm soon cooled. The Philippine Islands were ceded to the United States in the Peace of Paris, and it became ap-

⁶³Paine, op. cit., II, 1062.

⁶⁴Ibid., II, 1063.

⁶⁵Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, Albert Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917), II, 663.

relieved when Charles and Jarvis Langdon, who arrived in Vienna at this time, brought " . . . straight from America the comforting assurance that the war was not one of conquest or annexation, but a righteous defense of the weak. When, shortly after Theodore Stanton invited Tswain to the Decoration Day banquet to be held in Paris, he replied:

I thank you very much for your invitation and I would accept it if I were foot-loose. For I should value the privilege of helping you do honor to the men who revealed our broken Union and conserved that great work with their lives; and also I should like to be there to do homage to our soldiers and sailors of today and the past for another most righteous war, and after the hope that they may make short and decisive work of it and leave Cuba free and let them they lead for home again.

Tswain also wrote to Rev. Joseph Twichell, whose son had enlisted in the army:

I have never enjoyed a war--even in written history--as I am enjoying this one. For this is the noblest one that was ever fought, so far as my knowledge goes. It is a worthy thing to fight for one's freedom; it is another right thing to fight for another man's. And I think this is the first time it has been done.

But as events moved rapidly after the war, his enthusiasm soon cooled. The Philippine Islands were ceded to the United States in the Peace of Paris, and it became ap-

Spokane, on. 11, 1903.

11, 1903.

Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain's last name, Albert Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917), 11, 663.

parent that the Philippines were not to be freed. In fact, American troops slaughtered Filipinos who had been hopeful for freedom under Emilio Aguinaldo, and it was several years before the "rebellion" was finally quelled. One of the most unsavory aspects of American history, this drew a storm of protest. "Never in our history had any reform movement attracted a more distinguished group of supporters than that which rallied to the banner of anti-imperialism."⁶⁶ Grover Cleveland, William Jennings Bryan, Samuel Gompers, Andrew Carnegie, David Starr Jordan, William James, Jane Addams, William Vaughan Moody, Finley Peter Dunne, and Mark Twain were among the many men from all walks of life who opposed the American policy in the Philippines.⁶⁷

Twain, who had at first ardently supported the war, now said, "We started out to set those poor Filipinos free, but why that righteous plan miscarried perhaps I shall never know."⁶⁸ He added:

When the United States sent word to Spain that the Cuban atrocities must end she occupied the highest moral position ever taken by a nation since the Almighty made the earth. But when she snatched the Philippines she stained the flag.⁶⁹

⁶⁶Morison and Commager, op. cit., II, 339.

⁶⁷Loc. cit.

⁶⁸Paine, op. cit., III, 1116.

⁶⁹Ibid., II, 1064.

Twain refused to go to the polls in 1900. He accused Bryan of "financial heresy" and would not vote for McKinley because he had sent American boys to be shot down under a "polluted" flag in the Philippines.⁷⁰ Twain had previously written a characteristic letter to Twichell:

Apparently we are not proposing to set the Filipinos free and give their islands to them; and apparently we are not proposing to hang the priests and confiscate their property. If these things are so, the war out there has no interest for me.⁷¹

Twain, however, showed no lack of interest in the Philippine situation and spoke out more frankly and vehemently than upon any other topic of national importance:

We have bought some islands from a party who did not own them; with real smartness and a good counterfeit of disinterested friendliness we coaxed a confiding weak nation into a trap and closed it upon them; we went back on an honored guest of the Stars and Stripes when we had no further use for him and chased him to the mountains; we are as indisputably in possession of a wide-spreading archipelago as if it were our property; we have pacified some thousands of the islanders and buried them; destroyed their fields; burned their villages, and turned their widows and orphans out-of-doors; furnished heartbreak by exile to some dozens of disagreeable patriots; subjugated the remaining ten millions by Benevolent Assimilation, which is the pious new name of the musket; we have acquired property in the three hundred concubines and other slaves of our business partner, the Sultan of Sulu, and hoisted our protecting flag over that Swag.⁷²

⁷⁰Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 254.

⁷¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 694.

⁷²Paine, op. cit., III, 1164.

Twain remained irate for some time, and was especially bitter in his denunciation of General Funston, who had captured Aguinaldo, ". . . by methods which would disgrace the lowest blatherskite that is doing time in any penitentiary."⁷³

Wagenknecht said that when Twain published his "Defence of General Funston" in 1902,⁷⁴ he grew overnight from a jester to a major prophet.⁷⁵ "No sterner piece of excoriation ever came from the pen of an eighteenth-century satirist. For once his tendency to exaggeration did not betray him; not even his imagination could surpass the horrible truth."⁷⁶ Twain had attacked Funston by using his theory, expounded in What is Man?, that no individual is personally responsible for his actions. DeLancey Ferguson thought this a masterful satirical stroke:

It is hard to imagine how the excoriation of Funston could have been made more scathing than by the irony of exculpating him on the ground that not he but his innate disposition was to blame. Mark Twain had not, as he fondly believed, formulated a complete philosophy, but he had forged a superb satiric tool. People who have accused him of moral cowardice must somehow have overlooked this essay, beside the earlier clash with the missionaries. To attack the character of a popular military hero in the hour of his triumph called for courage.⁷⁷

⁷³Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 284.

⁷⁴Samuel L. Clemens, "Defence of General Funston," North American Review, CLXXIV (May, 1902), 613-24.

⁷⁵Wagenknecht, op. cit., pp. 253-54.

⁷⁶Ibid., p. 254.

⁷⁷Ferguson, op. cit., p. 290.

Twain remained there for some time, and was especially bitter in his denunciation of General Grant, who had captured "armies" . . . by means which would disgrace the lowest blatherer that is doing time in any penitentiary. . . .

Wegmannschacht said that when Twain published his "Defense of General Grant" in 1902, he grew overnight from a jester to a major prophet. . . . The answer gives of exhortation ever came from the pen of an eighteenth-century satirist. . . .

once his tendency to exaggeration did not betray him, not even his imagination could express the horrible truth. . . . Twain had attacked Grant by using his theory, extended in this is that no individual is personally responsible for his actions. . . . Delaney-Pearson thought this a masterful local stroke.

It is hard to imagine how the exhortation of Twain could have been more scathing than by the irony of exaggerating him on the ground that not he but his imagination was to blame. . . . Twain had not, as he readily believed, formulated a complete philosophy, but he had forged a superb satiric tool. . . . Twain had accused him of moral cowardice when he had not even looked this essay, beside the earlier claim that he was a moral coward. To attack the character of a popular military hero in the heat of his triumph called for courage.

-
284. Clements, Mark Twain's Autobiography, pp. 211-12.
285. General L. Clements, "Defense of General Grant," North American Review, CIVIL (May, 1902), 613-24.
286. Wegmannschacht, op. cit., pp. 233-34.
287. Ibid., p. 234.
288. Pearson, op. cit., p. 206.

Howells once called Twain's attention to some military outrages in the Philippines, but when Twain tried to write about them, he could think of nothing within the bounds of print, and was forced to walk the floor and curse in his fury.⁷⁸ There were times, however, when Twain's protests were placed on paper, chiefly in his Autobiography. One particular outburst concerned the massacre of six hundred natives by General Leonard Wood's forces. The natives had taken refuge in the bottom of an extinct volcano crater, and ". . . apparently the contending parties were about equal as to number--six hundred men on our side, on the edge of the bowl; six hundred men, women, and children in the bottom of the bowl."⁷⁹ "The battle began--it is officially called by that name--our forces firing down into the crater with their artillery and their deadly small arms of precision; the savages furiously returning the fire, probably with brickbats. . . ."⁸⁰ The entire six hundred natives were killed, while the Americans suffered lighter casualties: "The official report . . . in the interest of future historians of the United States . . . mentioned that a private had one

⁷⁸Paine, op. cit., III, 1196.

⁷⁹Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 188.

⁸⁰Loc. cit.

Howell once called Smith's letter to me a
very outrageous in the Philippines, and when Smith tried to
write about them, he could find nothing to write with
bonds of guilt, and was forced to write nothing and was
in his fury. There were three, however, who were
tests were placed on paper, calling to his attention.
One particular comment concerned the manner of his
natives by General Leach and Smith's letter. The letter was
taken refuge in the fact of an extreme violence during the
... especially the continuing battle of the
to number six hundred and on the side of the
boat; six hundred and seven, and shipped in the
the boat. The battle began - it is officially called by
first name - our forces killed seven and captured with them
artillery and their leader with him in a machine; the
arranged to follow the first group with which
data... The battle of the hundred natives was killed
while the Americans suffered light casualties. The
ficial report... is the latest of the
of the United States... was... that...

188.
189.
190.
191.
192.
193.
194.
195.
196.
197.
198.
199.
200.

of his elbows scraped by a missile, and . . . another private had the end of his nose scraped by a missile."⁸¹

Twain then criticized President Roosevelt for publicly lauding the victory, but Twain admitted that he too would do the same thing, for expediency's sake, if he were president.⁸² Roosevelt's inquiry about Lieutenant Johnson, a wounded officer, caused Twain to say:

The President has a warm spot in his heart for anybody who was present at that bloody collision of military solar systems, and so he lost no time in cabling to the wounded hero, "How are you?" And got a cable answer, "Fine, thanks." This is historical. This will go down to posterity.

Johnson was wounded in the shoulder with a slug. The slug was in a shell--for the account says the damage was caused by an exploding shell which blew Johnson off the rim. The people down in the hole had no artillery; therefore it was our own artillery that blew Johnson off the rim. And so it is now a matter of historical record that the only officer of ours who acquired a wound of advertising dimensions got it at our hands, and not the enemies'. It seems more than probable that if we had placed our soldiers out of the way of our own weapons, we should have come out of the most extraordinary battle in all history without a scratch.⁸³

It has been shown that he was outspoken, first in his approval of the Spanish-American War, and later in his denunciation of the results. Was he, though, as Ferguson has stated, really courageous? It should be recalled that

⁸¹Ibid., I, 189.

⁸²Ibid., I, 191.

⁸³Ibid., I, 195-96.

Twain, for reasons of his own, sided with a tremendous wave of war sentiment during the early days of the conflict, and that when his attitudes changed and he excoriated General Funston, "the popular military hero in the hour of his triumph," he was voicing the opinions of a powerful minority of important people, all of whom opposed American policy in the Philippines. Twain, then, although expressing himself with a strong degree of social consciousness on this conflict, was not at any time without support from an influential minority. Once again his emotions had led him to sympathize with the downtrodden minority--this time the oppressed Filipinos--but he did not have to stand up alone in his opinions. Intentionally or not, he played safe.

V. OTHER WARS

Late in his life he commented on several other wars. Ferguson mentioned this aspect of Twain's literary career:

No longer obliged to write for the market, he began to express himself on current affairs in writing. . . . He had plenty of material. The American war against the Filipinos was in full swing, and the briefly allied nations of Europe had just captured Peking and extorted indemnities from China for the lives and property lost in the Boxer rebellion. Kitchener was ending the Boer War by methods of calculated brutality and terrorism; the first reports of the work in the Belgian Congo's heart of darkness were beginning to reach the world.⁸⁴

⁸⁴Ferguson, op. cit., p. 283.

Twain, for reasons of his own, sided with a tremendous wave of war sentiment during the early days of the conflict, and that when his attitudes changed and he exor-
lated General Grant, "the popular military hero in the hour of his triumph," he was voicing the opinions of a powerful minority of important people, all of whom opposed American policy in the Philippines. Twain, then, although expressing himself with a strong degree of social consciousness on this conflict, was not at any time without support from an influential minority. Once again his emotions had led him to sympathize with the down-trodden minority--this time the oppressed Filipinos--but he did not have to stand up alone in his opinions. Intentionally or not, he played

ERASE

OTHER CASE

Late in his life he commented on several other wars. Ferguson mentioned this aspect of Twain's literary career:
No longer obliged to write for the market, he began to express himself on current affairs in writing. He had plenty of material. The American war against the Philippines was in full swing, and the British allied nations of Europe had just captured Feking and expelled indentured labor from China for the lives and property lost in the Boxer rebellion. Kitchener was ending the Boer war by methods of relentless brutality and terrorism; the first reports of the work in the Belgian Congo's heart of darkness were beginning to reach the world.

Twain's divided attitude toward the Boer War in South Africa was characteristic of his uncertainty and instability in dealing with important national or world events. Here again, in his eyes, a little country was being "picked on" by a larger power. He naturally sympathized with the underdog, the country defending itself. He had written about the Boers in Following the Equator, and during the Boer War, he wrote to Twichell:

I have just been examining chapter LXX of "Following the Equator," to see if the Boer's old military effectiveness is holding out. It reads curiously as if it had been written about the present war.

I believe that in the next chapter my notion of the Boer was rightly conceived. He is popularly called uncivilized, I do not know why. Happiness, food, shelter, clothes, wholesale labor, modest and rational ambitions, honesty, kindness, hospitality, love of freedom and limitless courage to fight for it, composure and fortitude in time of disaster, patience in time of hardship and privation, absence of noise and brag in time of victory, contentment with humble and peaceful life void of insane excitements--if there is a higher and better form of civilization than this, I am not aware of it and do not know where to look for it.⁸⁵

When the war first broke out, he wrote:

LONDON, 3.07 P.M., Wednesday, October 11, 1899. The time is up! Without doubt the first shot in the war is being fired to-day in South Africa at this moment. Some man had to be the first to fall; he has fallen. Whose heart is broken by this murder? For, be he Boer or be he Briton, it is murder, & England committed it by the hand of Chamberlain & the Cabinet, the lackeys of Cecil Rhodes & his Forty Thieves, the South Africa Company.⁸⁶

⁸⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 694-95.

⁸⁶Paine, op. cit., II, 1095.

Twain's divided attitude toward the Boer war in South Africa was characteristic of his uncertainty and instability in dealing with important national or world events. Here again, in his eyes, a little country was being "helped on" by a larger power. He naturally sympathized with the underdog, the country defending itself. He had written about the Boers in following the Kaiser, and during the Boer war he wrote to Twichell:

I have just been examining chapter LXX of "Following the Kaiser," to see if the Boer's old military effectiveness is holding out. It reads discouragingly as it had been written about the present war.

I believe that in the next chapter my notion of the Boer was rightly conceived. He is popularly called an animal, I do not know why. Happiness, good, kindness, honesty, kindness, hospitality, love of freedom and fearless courage to fight for it, composure and fortitude in time of disaster, balance in time of panic and privation, absence of noise and fuss in time of victory, contentment with humble and peaceful life void of insane excitement--if there is a higher and purer form of civilization than this, I am not aware of it and do not know where to look for it.

When the war first broke out, he wrote:

LONDON, 3.27 P.M., Wednesday, October 11, 1899. The time is up! Without doubt the first shot in the war is being fired to-day in South Africa at this moment. Some man had to be the first to fall; he has fallen. Whose heart is broken by this murder? Not, as the Boer or the British, it is neither, it is England committed by the hand of Chamberlain & the Cabinet. The Jackals of Cecil Rhodes & his Tory Thieves, the South African Company.

65 Clement, Mark Twain's letters, pp. 411, 11, 1899-1900.
66 Twain, op. cit., 11, 1899.

Twain had little sympathy for Cecil Rhodes when he and his men oppressed the Boers. Earlier, in Following the Equator, Twain had said, "Rhodesia is a happy name for that land of piracy and pillage, and puts the right stain upon it."⁸⁷

Although Twain's heart was with the Boers, he was very careful to avoid any public utterances on the subject.

Brooks said discerningly about Twain and the Boer War:

He rages in secret for the weaker; in public, an infallible monitor keeps him on the winning side. All that year, we note, "Clemens had been tossing on the London social tide;" he had to mind his P's and Q's in London drawing-rooms.⁸⁸

Twain thus chose the side of expediency--the side he usually chose on any controversial question. Although he believed ardently in liberty, he also believed in security and power for his own society group, and nowhere is this better expressed than in his letter to Howells, from London, January 25, 1900:

Privately speaking, this is a sordid and criminal war, and in every way shameful and excuseless. Every day I write (in my head) bitter magazine articles about it, but I have to stop with that. For England must not fall; it would mean an inundation of Russian and German political degradations which would envelop the globe and steep it in a sort of Middle-Age night and slavery which would last till Christ comes again. Even wrong--and she is wrong--England must be upheld. He is an enemy of the human race who shall speak against her now. . . . I talk the war with both sides, always waiting until the other

⁸⁷Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 361.

⁸⁸Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 139.

Twain had little sympathy for Cecil Rhodes when he set his
man opposed the Boers. Earlier in following the Boers.
Twain had said, "Rhodes is a happy name for that land of
pillage and pillage, and what the right claim upon it."
Although Twain's heart was with the Boers, he was
very careful to avoid any public utterance on the subject.
Brooks said disconcertingly about Twain and the Boers that
He never is ready for the war; he is ready to fight, as in-
finitely more ready than the Boers. All
that year, he wrote, "Clemens had been looking on the
London social side; he had to mind his P's and Q's
in London drawing-rooms."

Twain thus chose the side of expediency--the side he usually
chose on the controversial question. Although he believed
in liberty, he also believed in security and power
for the two world groups, and nowhere is this better ex-
pressed than in his letter to Howells, from London, January

25, 1900.

Privately speaking, Twain is a cordial and ardent
war, and in every way cheerful and enthusiastic. Every
day I write (to my head) bitter magazine articles about
it, but I have to stop with that. For England must not
fall; it would mean an annihilation of freedom and justice
political degradation which would engulf the globe and
step it in a sort of black-ink right and slavery which
would last till Christ comes again. Even now--the
is wrong--England must be upheld. He is an enemy of the
human race who shall speak against her now. I tell
the very truth both sides, always waiting until the other

87 Clemens, following the Boers, in 1900, 11, 11.
88 Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, pp. 215, 216.

man introduces the topic. Then I say "My head is with the Briton, but my heart and such rags of morals as I have are with the Boer--now we will talk, unembarrassed and without prejudice." And so we discuss, and have no trouble.⁸⁹

Ferguson mentioned that Twain never met Cecil Rhodes, and that it was just as well he did not, because Twain was often captivated by the ruthless tactics of "big" men.⁹⁰ If a man's predatory schemes were executed on a gigantic scale, Twain rarely could resist a partial feeling of admiration. In Following the Equator he had said about Rhodes, "I admire him, I frankly confess it; and when his time comes I shall buy a piece of the rope for a keepsake."⁹¹ Ferguson discerningly concluded, "His opinion of Rhodes, as he recorded it in his book, was sound though scathing; the flat-tery of a personal meeting might have clouded that judgment."⁹²

Twain was also concerned with another situation in Africa at this time--the plight of the oppressed natives in

⁸⁹Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 693.

⁹⁰Ferguson, op. cit., p. 268.

⁹¹Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 378. Twain, in II, 184, had considered Warren Hastings in much the same light as he did Rhodes: "He was a capable kind of person was Warren Hastings. . . . Some of his acts have left stains upon his name which can never be washed away, but he saved to England the Indian Empire, and that was the best service that was ever done to the Indians themselves, those wretched heirs of a hundred centuries of pitiless oppression and abuse." Note that Twain, usually considered the spokesman for freedom, is here adopting the "White Man's Burden" attitude.

⁹²Ferguson, op. cit., p. 268.

man introduced the topic. Then I say "My head is aching
the brain, but my heart and such parts of matter as I
have are with the South--now we will talk, unobscured
and without prejudice." And so we discuss, and have no
trouble.

Tewkeson mentioned that Twain never met Cecil Rhodes.

and that it was just as well he did not, because Twain was
often captivated by the rhetorical tactics of "big men."

If a man's pigsticker schemes were executed on a gigantic

scale, Twain rarely could resist a partial feeling of ad-

miration. In following the Emperor he had said "don't know."

"I admire him, I frankly confess it; and when his

I shall buy a piece of the rope for a knot-tyer."

disparagingly concluded, "his opinion of Rhodes, as he ex-

pressed it in his book, was sound though somewhat

tary of a personal meeting might have elucidated that judgment."

Twain was also concerned with another situation in

Africa at this time--the plight of the oppressed natives in

Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, pp. 211, 212, 213.

Tewkeson, pp. 211, p. 268.

Clemens, Following the Emperor, pp. 211, 212, 213.

Twain, in 1894, had considered Warren Hastings in much
the same light as he did Rhodes. "He was a capable kind of
person was Warren Hastings. . . . Some of his acts have left
stains upon his name which can never be washed away, but he
saved to England the Indian Empire, and that was the work
service that was ever done to the Indians themselves. These
wretched heirs of a hundred centuries of bitter oppression
and shame." Note that Twain, usually considered the author
man for freedom, is here admiring the British East India

Tewkeson, pp. 211, p. 268.

the Congo. Paine said:

Various plans and movements were undertaken for Congo reform, and Clemens worked and wrote letters and gave his voice and his influence and exhausted his rage, at last, as one after another of the half-organized and altogether futile undertakings showed no results.⁹³

King Leopold's Soliloquy was his one public utterance on this topic. Merle Johnson said of it:

The book is another of the "underdog" manifestations written for and circulated by the Congo Reform Association. Some of the evidence as presented by Mark Twain has since been discredited but Mark's honesty in the matter is still unimpeachable in the light of his many campaigns against similar situations.⁹⁴

While not great literature, the journalistic pamphlet has strength and emotional appeal. Twain tells of the many natives whose hands were amputated as punishment by the Belgian authorities,⁹⁵ the malicious ravishing and butchering of the native girls,⁹⁶ and the obscene mutilation of the men.⁹⁷ Paine stated that Twain's final comment on the subject was a proposed epitaph for King Leopold:

⁹³Paine, op. cit., III, 1231.

⁹⁴Merle DeVore Johnson, A Bibliography of the Works of Mark Twain (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1935), p. 83.

⁹⁵Samuel L. Clemens, King Leopold's Soliloquy, A Defense of His Congo Rule (Boston: The P. R. Warren Company, 1905), p. 14.

⁹⁶Ibid., p. 9.

⁹⁷Ibid., p. 21.

The Congo. (Laine 1913)

Various plans and proposals have been made for
Congo reform, and various writers and states have
given his views and his influence and expressed his
at least, a few other nations of the self-organizing
although finally some states have been resolved.

King Leopold's Belgium was the one who has been in

this topic. Maria Johnson also writes

The book is a history of the Belgian Congo, written
for the first time by the Congo, and is a history
tion. Some of the subjects are presented by King
has since been discussed and his influence in the
matter is still important. In the light of the
campaigns against the Congo.

THE CONGO

While not great differences, the Congo is a political

structure and is a political

native whose name is the Congo, and is a

Belgian authorities, and the Congo is a political

of the native state, and the Congo is a political

men. The Congo states that the Congo is a political

fact was a proposed article for the Congo.

1913, p. 1. The Congo is a political
The Congo is a political
of King Leopold (see text and appendix for details)
1913, p. 1.

1913, p. 1. The Congo is a political
The Congo is a political
The Congo is a political
1913, p. 1.

1913, p. 1.

1913, p. 1.

Here under this gilded tomb lies rotting the body of one the smell of whose name will still offend the nostrils of men ages upon ages after all the Caesars and Washingtons & Napoleons shall have ceased to be praised or blamed & been forgotten--Leopold of Belgium.⁹⁸

It should be noted that again Twain was not alone in his sympathies. John Wanamaker, Lyman Abbott, Henry Van Dyke, and David Starr Jordan were among the many prominent citizens interested in Congo reform.⁹⁹

The Boxer Rebellion also roused Twain's interest, and although he spoke at the Berkeley Lyceum in the autumn of 1900 in support of the Boxers,¹⁰⁰ he didn't have too much hope for their cause. He said in a letter to Twichell around that time:

It is all China, now, and my sympathies are with the Chinese. They have been villainously dealt with by the sceptred thieves of Europe, and I hope they will drive all the foreigners out and keep them out for good. I only wish it; of course I don't really expect it.¹⁰¹

In his lecture at the Lyceum Twain once again had backed up the oppressed people defending their homes:

Why should not China be free from the foreigners, who are only making trouble on her soil? If they would only all go home what a pleasant place China would be for the Chinese! We do not allow Chinamen to come here, and I

⁹⁸Paine, op. cit., III, 1231.

⁹⁹Clemens, King Leopold's Soliloquy, op. cit., p. 46.

¹⁰⁰Paine, op. cit., III, 1120.

¹⁰¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 699.

say, in all seriousness, that it would be a graceful thing to let China decide who shall go there.

China never wanted foreigners any more than foreigners wanted Chinamen, and on this question I am with the Boxers every time. The Boxer is a patriot. He loves his country better than he does the countries of other people. I wish him success. We drive the Chinamen out of our country; the Boxer believes in driving us out of his country. I am a Boxer, too, on these terms.¹⁰²

Mark Twain was also concerned with events in Russia near the turn of the century, and nowhere showed more strikingly his dual feelings. Strongly in favor of a Russian Revolution against the Czar, Twain wrote to the revolutionist Tchaykoffsky:

My sympathies are with the Russian revolution, of course. It goes without saying. I hope it will succeed, and now that I have talked with you I take heart to believe it will. Government by falsified promises, by lies, by treachery, and by the butcher knife, for the aggrandizement of a single family of drones and its idle and vicious kin has been borne quite long enough in Russia, I should think. And it is to be hoped that the roused nation, now rising in its strength, will presently put an end to it and set up the republic in its place. Some of us, even the white-headed, may live to see the

¹⁰²Paine, op. cit., III, 1120. Although there were times when he adopted the "White Man's Burden" attitude, Twain, always inconsistent, also deplored the imperialistic wave sweeping the world. He had said in Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 4-5, "News comes that within this week Siam had acknowledged herself to be, in effect, a French province. It seems plain that all savage and semi-civilized countries are going to be grabbed."

blessed day when czars and grand dukes will be as scarce there as I trust they are in heaven.¹⁰³

When the Russo-Japanese War broke out, Twain supported the Japanese in the hope that the Czar would be overthrown. Peace came before this could occur, and Twain angrily replied to a newspaper reporter's query:

Russia was on the highroad to emancipation from all insane and intolerable slavery. I was hoping there would be no peace until Russian liberty was safe. I think that this was a holy war, in the best and noblest sense of that abused term, and that no war was ever charged with a higher mission.

I think there can be no doubt that that mission is now defeated and Russia's chain riveted; this time to stay. I think the Tsar will now withdraw the small humanities that have been forced from him, and resume his medieval barbarisms with a relieved spirit and an immeasurable joy. I think Russian liberty has had its last chance and has lost it.¹⁰⁴

At this time Twain published his article, "The Tsar's Soliloquy," which claimed that the Emperor controlled Russia not by his own abilities, but merely by his regal clothing

¹⁰³Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 795. Twain also had written an open letter to the Czar, at editorial request, but it was never published. It read in part, "Of course I know that the properest way to demolish the Russian throne would be by Revolution. But it is not possible to get up a revolution there; so the only thing left to do, apparently, is to keep the throne vacant by dynamite until a day when the candidates shall decline with thanks. Then organize the Republic." Ibid., II, 537.

¹⁰⁴Paine, op. cit., III, 1242.

and titles which awed the common people.¹⁰⁵ He also spoke at the New York Casino, December 18, 1905, for the benefit of the Russian sufferers,¹⁰⁶ but he never became a true champion of the Russian people, who were virtually slaves of the Czar. This can be illustrated by his modification of a telegram sent to Colonel Harvey who, in 1905, invited Twain to dine with the Russian delegates to the Portsmouth Convention. The first two drafts were not mailed:

TO COLONEL HARVEY.--I am still a cripple, otherwise I should be more than glad of this opportunity to meet those illustrious magicians who with the pen have annulled, obliterated and abolished every high achievement of the Japanese sword and turned the tragedy of a tremendous war into a gay and blithesome comedy. If I may, let me in all respect and honor salute them as my fellow-humorists, I taking third place, as becomes one who was not born to modesty, but by diligence and hard work in acquiring it.

MARK

DEAR COLONEL--No, this is a love-feast; when you call a lodge of sorrow send for me.

MARK.¹⁰⁷

The following draft, which he mailed, so pleased Harvey that he wanted the Czar to see it:

TO COLONEL HARVEY.--I am still a cripple, otherwise I should be more than glad of this opportunity to meet the illustrious magicians who came here equipped with

¹⁰⁵Samuel L. Clemens, "The Tsar's Soliloquy," North American Review, CLXXX (March, 1905), 321-6.

¹⁰⁶Paine, op. cit., III, 1254.

¹⁰⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 776.

nothing but a pen, and with it have divided the honors of the war with the sword. It is fair to presume that in thirty centuries history will not get done admiring these men who attempted what the world regarded as impossible and achieved it.

MARK TWAIN¹⁰⁸

Thus Twain backed down from his position as defender of an oppressed nation. Wagenknecht said of Twain, "He can find nothing harsh enough to say, privately. . . ." ¹⁰⁹ of those who hindered the Russians' chances for freedom. Ferguson said of Twain and the Russo-Japanese War, "But he withheld his most vitriolic comments, as he continued to withhold 'The War Prayer' and his many criticisms of the God of the Old Testament."¹¹⁰ Twain had also shown his reluctance to oppose public opinion in his dealings with the Russian revolutionist, Maxim Gorky. At first strong in his support of him, Twain eventually turned a cold shoulder to him when he learned the Russian was living with a woman out of wedlock. New York papers played up the "scandal," and Twain was careful to keep his nose away from the entire Russian problem.

In this chapter it has been shown that Twain, often considered a champion of the "underdog," acted as such a

¹⁰⁸Loc. cit.

¹⁰⁹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 261. The italics are mine.

¹¹⁰Ferguson, op. cit., p. 302.

nothing but a pen, and with it have divided the honors of the war with the sword. It is fair to assume that in thirty centuries history will not yet have admitted these men who attempted what the world regarded as impossible and achieved it.

WALT WHITMAN

These facts backed down from his position as defender of an oppressed nation. Wagnerscheid said of Twain, "He can find nothing harsh enough to say, privately. . . . 100 of those who hindered the Russians' chances for freedom. Twain said of Twain and the Russo-Japanese War, 'But he withheld his most virulent comments, as he continued to withhold

'The War Prayer,' and his many criticisms of the Old Testament.' 110 Twain had also shown his reluctance to oppose public opinion in his dealings with the Russian revolutionist, Maxim Gorky. At first strong in his opinion of him, Twain eventually turned a cold shoulder to him when he learned the Russian was living with a woman out of wedlock. New York papers played up the "scandal," and Twain was careful to keep his nose away from the entire Russian problem.

In this chapter it has been shown that Twain, often considered a champion of the "underdog," acted in such a

108 loc. cit.

109 Wagnerscheid, op. cit., p. 261. The italics are

mine.

110 Ferguson, op. cit., p. 302.

champion only when it was personally expedient for him to do so. Wagenknecht said:

It is a fact that Mark Twain deliberately withheld from publication many articles of the tenor of the powerful "War Prayer," that he failed publicly to express his convictions on the Boer War, even going so far as to withdraw an article that he had intended for publication, that he deliberately deceived the public with regard to his opinions concerning the conflict between Russia and Japan.¹¹¹

Twain's heart was always with the suffering, oppressed peoples, but he lived in an age of growing imperialism and was careful not to jeopardize his high position in the hearts of the reading public by outwardly opposing popular opinions. Twain saw the savage imperialistic land grabs all over the world,¹¹² raged at them in private, and ultimately despaired that the human race was worth saving.

¹¹¹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 239.

¹¹²Van Wyck Brooks, in The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 151, questioned Twain's ability to understand the currents of world events into which he was immersed: "In all the years of his traveling to and fro through Europe he divined hardly one of the social tendencies that had so spectacular a denouement within four years of his death."

champion only when it was personally expedient for him to

do so. Wagnersicht said:

It is a fact that Mark Twain deliberately withheld from publication many articles of the kind of the powerful "War Prayer," that he failed publicly to express his convictions on the Boer War, even going as far as to withdraw an article that he had intended for publication, that he deliberately deceived the public with regard to his opinions concerning the conflict between Russia and Japan.

Twain's heart was always with the suffering, oppressed peoples, but he lived in an age of growing imperialism and was careful not to jeopardize his high position in the hearts of the reading public by outwardly opposing popular opinions. Twain saw the savage imperialistic race grab all over the world, he raged at them in private, and ultimately despaired that the human race was worth saving.

Wagnersicht, op. cit., p. 239.

Wagnersicht, op. cit., p. 239. In the *Ordeal of Mark Twain*, p. 151, questioned Twain's ability to understand the currents of world events into which he was immersed. In all the years of his traveling to and fro through Europe he divided hardly one of the social tendencies that had so spectacular a development within four years of his death.

CHAPTER III

WESTWARD EXPANSION AND IMPERIALISM

Mark Twain lived in an era of booming expansion. While he was a youth, his Mississippi Valley environment was America's western frontier. When the gold rush sent hordes of men pouring over the Rocky Mountains, Twain was not long in following the crowd into the Washoe Territory and California. The Hawaiian Islands, still known in the 1860's as the Sandwich Islands, were the object of many covetous and imperialistic eyes throughout the world. He visited these islands, and became extremely interested in the question of annexation. In later years he traveled over virtually the entire surface of the globe, and saw many small countries gobbled up by imperialistic powers. This chapter will look at several of the larger phases of territorial expansion in Mark Twain's time, and will attempt to determine how much he criticized this movement.

I. THE MISSISSIPPI WEST

Many critics have pointed out that Twain's best work was characterized by a nostalgic yearning for the "good old times" on the Mississippi River--the colorful era that has long since passed away. Russell Blankenship said, "With

WESTWARD EXPANSION AND IMPERIALISM

Mark Twain lived in an era of soaring expansion.

While he was a youth, the Mississippi Valley settlement was America's western frontier. When the gold rush came, hundreds of men pouring over the Rocky Mountains, Twain was not far in following the crowd into the Kansas Territory and California. The Mexican Islands, still known in the 1850's as the Sandwich Islands, were the object of many voyages and imperialistic wars throughout the world. He visited these islands, and became deeply interested in the question of annexation. In later years he traveled over virtually the entire surface of the globe, and saw many small countries gobbling up by imperialistic powers. This chapter will look at several of the larger phases of territorial expansion in Mark Twain's time, and will attempt to determine how much he criticized this movement.

1. THE MISSISSIPPI WEST

Many critics have pointed out that Twain's best work was characterized by a nostalgic yearning for the "good old times" on the Mississippi River--the colorful era that has long since passed away. Maxwell Blacksmith said, "Twain

deep sorrow he watched America turn its back upon the easy ways of frontier life. . . ."¹ In many ways Twain's attitude resembled Sherwood Anderson's in "Ohio: I'll say We've Done Well." In that sketch the big, black, booming industrialism is made to seem ugly when compared with the idyllic rural life of bygone days.² Tom Sawyer, Huckleberry Finn, and Life on the Mississippi are usually considered Twain's greatest portraits of the idyllic old times, and it is not the purpose of this thesis to deny either the enchantment of these books or that Twain did idealize the Old West. Twain was, however, always remarkably inconsistent, and often was swept away in the excitement of westward expansion. Ernest Leisy said, "In this thorough American the spirit of expansion that followed the war was incarnate."³ The pictures presented in Life on the Mississippi support this statement. Although Twain was often critical of the methods

¹Blankenship, op. cit., p. 460.

²Sherwood Anderson, "Ohio: I'll Say We've Done Well," In Search of America, Lucy Lockwood Hazard, editor (New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1930), pp. 201-8.

³Leisy, op. cit., p. 170.

deep sorrow he watched America turn its back upon the easy
ways of frontier life. . . . In many ways Twain's at-
titude resembled Sherwood Anderson's in "Older I'll say I've
Done Well." In that sketch the big, black, booming Indian
civilian is made to seem ugly when compared with the idyllic
rural life of bygone days. The Frontier and Life on the Mississippi
and Life on the Mississippi are usually considered Twain's
greatest portraits of the idyllic old times, and it is not
the purpose of this thesis to deny either the authenticity
of these books or that Twain did idealize the old times.
Twain was, however, always remarkably inconsistent, and
often we find even in the treatment of westward expansion.
Twain, as we have seen, in his thorough American the spirit of
expansion that followed the war was irresistible. The pic-
tures presented in Life on the Mississippi support this
statement. Although Twain was often critical of the new

Blackburn, op. cit., p. 160.

Sherwood Anderson, "Older I'll say I've Done Well,"
in Heart of America, Lucy Jackson Harris, editor (New York:
Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1930), pp. 201-2.

Twain, op. cit., p. 170.

of expansion,⁴ he still rejoiced in the material progress shown by the American people. Despite Twain's disappointment in the passing of the once-great river boat trade, he was surprised and pleased to see so much progress along the "Upper River."⁵ Throughout his entire career he was always

⁴He has said in Life on the Mississippi, op. cit., p. 258, "How solemn and beautiful is the thought that the earliest pioneer of our civilization, the van-leader of civilization, is never the steamboat, never the railroad, never the newspaper, never the Sabbath-school, never the missionary--but always whisky! Such is the case. Look history over; you will see. The missionary comes after the whisky--I mean he arrives after the whisky has arrived; next comes the poor immigrant, with ax and hoe and rifle; next, the trader; next, the miscellaneous rush; next, the gambler, the desperado, the highwayman, and all their kindred in sin of both sexes; and next, the smart chap who has bought up an old grant that covers all the land; this brings the lawyer tribe; the vigilance committee brings the undertaker. All these interests bring the newspaper; the newspaper starts up politics and a railroad; all hands turn to and build a church and a jail--and behold! civilization is established forever in the land. But whisky, you see, was the van-leader in this beneficent work. It always is."

⁵Ibid., p. 247: "The big towns drop in, thick and fast, now; and between stretch processions of thrifty farms, not desolate solitude. Hour by hour, the boat plows deeper and deeper into the great and populous Northwest; and with each successive section of it which is revealed, one's surprise and respect gather emphasis and increase. Such a people, and such achievements as theirs, compel homage. This is an independent race who think for themselves, and who are competent to do it, because they are educated and enlightened; they read, they keep abreast of the best and newest thought; they fortify every weak place in their land with a school, a college, a library, and a newspaper; and they live under law. Solicitude for the future of a race like this is not in order."

impressed by progress as shown in statistics. This is nowhere better illustrated than in the following passage, wherein he figuratively smacks his lips in approval of industrialized expansion along the river:

Helena is the second town in Arkansas, in point of population--which is placed at five thousand. The country about it is exceptionally productive. Helena has a good cotton trade; handles from forty to sixty thousand bales annually; she has a large lumber and grain commerce; has a foundry, oil-mills, machine shops, and wagon factories--in brief, has one million dollars invested in manufacturing industries. She has two railways, and is the commercial center of a broad and prosperous region. The gross receipts of money, annually, from all sources, are placed by the New Orleans Times-Democrat at four million dollars.⁶

Thus it was impossible for Mark Twain to act as an effective social critic of the Gilded Age as it developed along the Mississippi River, because even though his intellect warned him of the many evils and faults in this way of life, his emotions were carried away in enthusiastic approval of materialistic growth which could be measured in huge numbers.

The novel which has usually been considered Twain's best satire on expansion along the Mississippi River is The Gilded Age. Here, at his best, is that great visionary, Colonel Sellers, who was patterned after James Lampton, a cousin of Jane Clemens. Some of the satirical portions of

⁶Ibid., p. 142.

impressed by progress as shown in statistics. This is not
where better illustrated than in the following passage:
wherein he figuratively suggests the line of approval of the
characterized expansion along the river:

Bahama is the second best in America in point of
population--which is about 250,000. The country
about it is geographically beautiful. Bahama
has a good cotton trade, handles from forty to fifty
thousand bales annually, and has a large sugar and
cocoa business. It is a country of all kinds, including
shops, and wages for labor--in fact, has one million
dollars invested in manufacturing industries. It
has two railways, and is the commercial center of
the West Indies. The gross product of
the island is about \$10,000,000 annually, from all sources, and placed in
New Orleans first--second at four million dollars.

Thus it was impossible for North America to not be an
effective social critic of the United States as it developed
along the Mississippi River, because even though many
believed warned him of the very evils and evils in this way
of life, his emotions were carried away in sentimental
approval of sentimental growth which could be measured in
huge numbers.

The novel which has usually been considered "The
best satire on expansion along the Mississippi River" is
"Gilded Age," by Mark Twain and Charles Dudley Warner.
Colonel Sellers, who was mentioned after James Jackson,
cousin of Jane Clansons. One of the principal persons of

the novel, however, caricature closer relatives than James Lampton. Twain's father, John Marshall Clemens, had once been head of a company which sought a Congressional appropriation to make the Salt River navigable. The villagers of tiny Florida, Missouri, which was located on this muddy creek, even went so far as to build a boatyard in their enthusiasm, but of course the visionary project soon fell through.⁷

Extensive reading in Mark Twain and in the biographical literature about him shows the extremely close relationship between the personalities of Colonel Sellers and his creator. When this becomes apparent, the effectiveness of much of the satire in The Gilded Age is lost. One cannot help feeling that Twain was almost carried away in his characterization of Colonel Sellers. It is true, of course, that other characters looked at the barren Mississippi land more realistically than Sellers did, for the following passage reveals how ludicrous were Sellers' dreams. This village, Stone's Landing, was to be, according to Sellers, the great metropolis of Napoleon:

The fellows turned out of their tents, rubbing their eyes, and stared about them. They were camped on the second bench of the narrow bottom of a crooked, sluggish stream, that was some five rods wide in the present good stage of water. Before them were a dozen log cabins, with stick and mud chimneys, irregularly

⁷Paine, op. cit., I, 20.

the novel, however, caricatured closer relatives than James
 Leighton. Twain's father, John Marshall Clement, had once
 been head of a company which sought a Congressional ap-
 propriation to make the Salt River navigable. The villagers
 of tiny Ellettsville, Missouri, which was located on this muddy
 creek, even went so far as to build a postcard in their
 enthusiasm, but of course the visionary project soon fell
 through.

Extensive reading in Mark Twain and in the history
 of literature about him shows the extremely close relation-
 ship between the personalities of Colonel Clement and his
 creator. When this becomes apparent, the effectiveness of
 much of the satire in The Gilded Age is lost. The
 help feeling that Twain was almost carried away in his
 characterization of Colonel Clemens. It is true, of course,
 that other characters looked at the barren Mississippi land
 more realistically than Clemens did, for the following pas-
 sage reveals how different were Clemens' dreams. This
 village, Stone's Landing, was to be, according to Clemens,
 the great metropolis of America:

The fellows turned out of their tents, rubbing their
 eyes, and stared about them. They were camped on the
 second bench of the narrow bottom of a crooked, nine-
 mile stream, that was some five rods wide in the nar-
 row stage of water. Before them was a barren bog
 cabin, with stick and chimney, irregularly

disposed on either side of a not very well defined road, which did not seem to know its own mind exactly, and, after straggling through the town, wandered off over the rolling prairie in an uncertain way, as if it had started for nowhere and was quite likely to reach its destination. Just as it left the town, however, it was cheered and assisted by a guide-board, upon which was the legend "10 Miles to Hawkeye."⁸

But then Colonel Sellers arrived on the scene, and soon bolstered up morale:

You haven't looked about any yet, gentlemen? It's in the rough yet, in the rough. Those buildings will all have to come down. That's the place for the public square, court-house, hotels, churches, jail--all that sort of thing. About where we stand, the deepo. How does that strike your engineering eye, Mr. Thompson? Down yonder the business streets, running to the wharves. The University up there, on rising ground, sightly place, see the river for miles. That's Columbus River, only forty-nine miles to the Missouri. You see what it is, placid, steady, no current to interfere with navigation, wants widening in places and dredging, dredge out the harbor and raise a levee in front of the town; made by nature on purpose for a mart. Look at all this country, not another building within ten miles, hemp, tobacco, corn, must come here. The railroad will do it, Napoleon won't know itself in a year.⁹

Twain was actually poking fun at the many speculators in western lands at this time, but Colonel Sellers is so like Twain himself in his enthusiasm for material progress that it is difficult to consider this satire as great as it could have been. Edgar Lee Masters thought the satire in The Gilded Age should have hit harder:

Along comes Colonel Sellers at last about the town of Napoleon. And to think of Jay Gould and the pythons

⁸Samuel Langhorne Clemens and Charles Dudley Warner, The Gilded Age, A Tale of Today (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1915), I, 168.

⁹Ibid., I, 170.

disappeared on either side of a not very well defined road, which did not seem to know its own mind exactly, and after straggling through the town, wandered off over the rolling prairie in an uncertain way, as if it had started for nowhere and was quite likely to reach its destination, but as it left the town, however, it was observed and assisted by a guide-board, upon which was the legend "10 Miles to Hawkeye".

But then Colonel Sellers arrived on the scene, and soon he

started up towards

You haven't looked about any yet, gentlemen. It's in the rough yet, in the rough. Those buildings will all have to come down. That's the place for the public square, court-house, hotels, churches, jail--all that sort of thing. About where we stand, the bridge. How does that strike your engineering eye, Mr. Thompson? Then further the business district, running to the wharves. The University of Iowa, on rising ground, slightly higher, and the river for miles. That's Columbus river, only forty miles away to the westward. You see what it is, really, no effort to interfere with navigation, wants widening in places and dredging, bridges out the harbor and raises a levee in front of the town, made by nature on purpose for a wall. Look at all this country, not another building within ten miles, home, tobacco, corn, must come here. The railroad will do it. Hawkeye won't know itself in a year.

There was actually going on at the many speculators in western lands at this time, but Colonel Sellers is so like Twain himself in his enthusiasm for material progress that it is difficult to consider this satire as great as it could have been. Edgar Lee Masters thought the satire in The Gilded Age should have hit harder:

Along comes Colonel Sellers at last about the town of Babylon. And to think of Jay Gould and the pythons

⁸Samuel Langhorne Clemens and Charles Dudley Warner, The Gilded Age: A Tale of Today (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1873), 1, 103.

of the seventies being passed off and dealt with in terms of a garrulous visionary like this country character from Missouri!¹⁰

But Mark Twain was possessed with that part of the pioneer spirit known as "the vision of the possibility of things." For many years he placed his hope in the Tennessee land, bequeathed to the family by his father. After that it was timber claims, gold and silver mines, and then numerous and varied inventions. This man, ever eager to find wealth and exploit natural resources, could never have been a great critic of the speculation connected with materialistic expansion.

II. THE FAR WEST

When the great gold rush was in full progress in 1849, Mark Twain, from his mid-continent vantage point in Hannibal, saw the bustle of excitement as men flocked toward the Pacific Coast:

Even with the Mexican War concluded, those were stirring days in Hannibal. Returned volunteers from the war told tales of their adventures, and the great overland trek to California or Oregon was on. In 1849 Sam enviously watched his schoolmate, John RoBards, ride off with his father on the way to California and the gold fields, and saw him return two years later covered with the ineffable glory of travel which had included a return voyage by way of Cape Horn. Sam wanted to travel, too, but his slender earnings were needed at home.¹¹

¹⁰Masters, op. cit., pp. 116-17.

¹¹Ferguson, op. cit., p. 34.

of the seventies being passed off and dealt with in terms of a variously visionary like this country character from Mississippi.

But Mark Twain was possessed with that part of the pioneer spirit known as "the vision of the possibility of things."

For many years he placed his hope in the Tennessee land.

perpetuated to the family by his father. After that it was

timber claims, gold and silver mines, and then numerous

and varied inventions. This man, ever eager to find wealth

and exploit natural resources, could never have been a great

critic of the speculation connected with materialistic ex-

pansion.

II. THE FAR WEST

When the great gold rush was in full progress in

1849, Mark Twain, from his mid-continent vantage point in

Hannibal, saw the promise of excitement as men flocked toward

the Pacific Coast:

Even with the Mexican War concluded, those were stirring days in Hannibal. Returned volunteers from the war told tales of their adventures, and the great overland trail to California or Oregon was on. In 1849 Sam anxiously watched his schoolmate, John Robards, ride off with his father on the way to California and the gold fields, and saw him return two years later covered with the ineffable glory of travel which had included a return voyage by way of Cape Horn. Sam wanted to travel, too, but his slender earnings were needed at home.

Twain was always the champion of the underdog when a large country was moving in on a smaller one, but in this instance he was too young to think much about how most of the American West had been grabbed from Mexico. Although in Life on the Mississippi he excoriated La Salle and the French for stealing the Mississippi Valley from the Indians,¹² only once did Twain ever mention how the United States obtained its land from Mexico. Through the mouth of Tom Sawyer Twain said, "We've took California away from the Mexicans two or three years ago, so that part of the Pacific Coast is ours now. . ."¹³

In 1861 Mark Twain went into this western land taken from Mexico, and once again was inflamed with the spirit of expansion. The silver rush began in 1859, and the Washoe

¹²Clemens, Life on the Mississippi, op. cit., pp. 11-12: "The white man and the red man struck hands and entertained each other during the three days. Then, to the admiration of the savages, La Salle set up a cross with the arms of France on it, and took possession of the whole country for the king--the cool fashion of the time--while the priest piously consecrated the robbery with a hymn. The priest explained the mysteries of the faith "by signs," for the saving of the savages; thus compensating them with possible possessions in heaven for the certain ones on earth which they had just been robbed of. And also, by signs, La Salle drew from these simple children of the forest acknowledgments of fealty to Louis the Putrid, over the water. Nobody smiled at these colossal ironies."

¹³Samuel Langhorne Clemens, Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective, and Other Stories (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917), p. 77.

Territory was about to become the state of Nevada. Theoretically the assistant (without pay) to his brother, Orion, the Secretary of the Washoe Territory, Mark Twain actually did little official work. He was far too human, and soon had caught the frenzied fever of speculation. His first act was to stake a large timber claim with John D. Kinney at Lake Bigler (later Lake Tahoe). Yet when he neglected his camp fire and accidentally set fire to this great mass of virgin forest, there was no sense of waste, or any regret at the loss. Note this account of the disaster written to his mother:

The mighty roaring of the conflagration, together with our solitary and somewhat unsafe position (for there was no one within six miles of us,) rendered the scene very impressive. Occasionally, one of us would remove his pipe from his mouth and say,--'Superb! magnificent! Beautiful! . . .'¹⁴

But there was much more timber at hand, and soon Twain had schemes "with millions in them" for the whole family. In October, 1861, he wrote to his in-laws:

I have already laid a timber claim on the borders of a lake [Bigler] which throws Como in the shade--and if we succeed in getting one Mr. Jones to move his saw-mill up there, Mr. Moffett can just consider that claim better than bank stock. . . . Orion and I have confidence enough in this country to think that if the war will let us alone we can make Mr. Moffett rich without its ever costing him a cent or particle of trouble.¹⁵

¹⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 56.

¹⁵Ibid., I, 59-60.

Gamaliel Bradford once said of Twain, "Even Nature did not touch great depths in him, because they were not there."¹⁶ It is not the purpose of this thesis to defend Bradford's statement, but it does appear that when Nature affected Twain it was often in a financial way. He saw the vast expanses of timber as raw material for a million dollar industry, just as Colonel Sellers saw dilapidated Stone's Landing as a coming metropolis.

From timber claims Mark Twain turned to mining. His Sellers-like disposition soon discovered that working in a mine was less interesting than speculating in mining stock. Twain said of this in Roughing It, "We fell victims to the epidemic and strained every nerve to acquire more feet."¹⁷ "We traded some of our 'feet' for 'feet' in other people's claims. In a little while we owned largely in . . . fifty other 'mines' that had never been molested by a shovel or scratched with a pick."¹⁸ Twain concluded;

We had not less than thirty thousand "feet" apiece in the "richest mines on earth" as the frenzied cant phrased it--and were in debt to the butcher. We were stark mad with excitement--drunk with happiness--smothered under mountains of prospective wealth--arrogantly compassionate toward the plodding millions who knew not our marvelous canyon--but our credit was not good at the grocer's.

¹⁶Bradford, op. cit., p. 18.

¹⁷Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., I, 233.

¹⁸Loc. cit.

Garnett Bradford once said of himself, "I was a very good
touch first night in his business, very good and then."
It is not the purpose of this article to defend Bradford's
statements, but it does suggest that when his statements
were made in a "business" way, he was very good.
He was of course a very successful man in the oil
business, just as almost all others who are mentioned in
this article as a coming attraction.

From these other facts, it is evident that
Selfish-like disposition was a very important factor in
his life.

REVERSE BOND

EFFICIENCY

Twain said in his book "The American Note" that
efficiency and economy were the two main factors in
the success of a business. He said that the man who
travels more of his time, the more he knows about the
business. In a little while we will see how
other things that he has been advised to do have
separated him from the rest.

He had not been long in the business before he
the "right" kind of capital to the business. He
purchased it--and went in with the business. He was
at first with a very small amount of capital--
another man's money. He was very successful in the
business, and he was very successful in the business.
He had not been long in the business before he
the "right" kind of capital to the business. He
purchased it--and went in with the business. He was
at first with a very small amount of capital--
another man's money. He was very successful in the
business, and he was very successful in the business.

1890-1891, 1892-1893, 1894-1895, 1896-1897, 1898-1899, 1900-1901, 1902-1903, 1904-1905, 1906-1907, 1908-1909, 1910-1911, 1912-1913, 1914-1915, 1916-1917, 1918-1919, 1920-1921, 1922-1923, 1924-1925, 1926-1927, 1928-1929, 1930-1931, 1932-1933, 1934-1935, 1936-1937, 1938-1939, 1940-1941, 1942-1943, 1944-1945, 1946-1947, 1948-1949, 1950-1951, 1952-1953, 1954-1955, 1956-1957, 1958-1959, 1960-1961, 1962-1963, 1964-1965, 1966-1967, 1968-1969, 1970-1971, 1972-1973, 1974-1975, 1976-1977, 1978-1979, 1980-1981, 1982-1983, 1984-1985, 1986-1987, 1988-1989, 1990-1991, 1992-1993, 1994-1995, 1996-1997, 1998-1999, 2000-2001, 2002-2003, 2004-2005, 2006-2007, 2008-2009, 2010-2011, 2012-2013, 2014-2015, 2016-2017, 2018-2019, 2020-2021, 2022-2023, 2024-2025, 2026-2027, 2028-2029, 2030-2031, 2032-2033, 2034-2035, 2036-2037, 2038-2039, 2040-2041, 2042-2043, 2044-2045, 2046-2047, 2048-2049, 2050-2051, 2052-2053, 2054-2055, 2056-2057, 2058-2059, 2060-2061, 2062-2063, 2064-2065, 2066-2067, 2068-2069, 2070-2071, 2072-2073, 2074-2075, 2076-2077, 2078-2079, 2080-2081, 2082-2083, 2084-2085, 2086-2087, 2088-2089, 2090-2091, 2092-2093, 2094-2095, 2096-2097, 2098-2099, 2100-2101, 2102-2103, 2104-2105, 2106-2107, 2108-2109, 2110-2111, 2112-2113, 2114-2115, 2116-2117, 2118-2119, 2120-2121, 2122-2123, 2124-2125, 2126-2127, 2128-2129, 2130-2131, 2132-2133, 2134-2135, 2136-2137, 2138-2139, 2140-2141, 2142-2143, 2144-2145, 2146-2147, 2148-2149, 2150-2151, 2152-2153, 2154-2155, 2156-2157, 2158-2159, 2160-2161, 2162-2163, 2164-2165, 2166-2167, 2168-2169, 2170-2171, 2172-2173, 2174-2175, 2176-2177, 2178-2179, 2180-2181, 2182-2183, 2184-2185, 2186-2187, 2188-2189, 2190-2191, 2192-2193, 2194-2195, 2196-2197, 2198-2199, 2200-2201, 2202-2203, 2204-2205, 2206-2207, 2208-2209, 2210-2211, 2212-2213, 2214-2215, 2216-2217, 2218-2219, 2220-2221, 2222-2223, 2224-2225, 2226-2227, 2228-2229, 2230-2231, 2232-2233, 2234-2235, 2236-2237, 2238-2239, 2240-2241, 2242-2243, 2244-2245, 2246-2247, 2248-2249, 2250-2251, 2252-2253, 2254-2255, 2256-2257, 2258-2259, 2260-2261, 2262-2263, 2264-2265, 2266-2267, 2268-2269, 2270-2271, 2272-2273, 2274-2275, 2276-2277, 2278-2279, 2280-2281, 2282-2283, 2284-2285, 2286-2287, 2288-2289, 2290-2291, 2292-2293, 2294-2295, 2296-2297, 2298-2299, 2300-2301, 2302-2303, 2304-2305, 2306-2307, 2308-2309, 2310-2311, 2312-2313, 2314-2315, 2316-2317, 2318-2319, 2320-2321, 2322-2323, 2324-2325, 2326-2327, 2328-2329, 2330-2331, 2332-2333, 2334-2335, 2336-2337, 2338-2339, 2340-2341, 2342-2343, 2344-2345, 2346-2347, 2348-2349, 2350-2351, 2352-2353, 2354-2355, 2356-2357, 2358-2359, 2360-2361, 2362-2363, 2364-2365, 2366-2367, 2368-2369, 2370-2371, 2372-2373, 2374-2375, 2376-2377, 2378-2379, 2380-2381, 2382-2383, 2384-2385, 2386-2387, 2388-2389, 2390-2391, 2392-2393, 2394-2395, 2396-2397, 2398-2399, 2400-2401, 2402-2403, 2404-2405, 2406-2407, 2408-2409, 2410-2411, 2412-2413, 2414-2415, 2416-2417, 2418-2419, 2420-2421, 2422-2423, 2424-2425, 2426-2427, 2428-2429, 2430-2431, 2432-2433, 2434-2435, 2436-2437, 2438-2439, 2440-2441, 2442-2443, 2444-2445, 2446-2447, 2448-2449, 2450-2451, 2452-2453, 2454-2455, 2456-2457, 2458-2459, 2460-2461, 2462-2463, 2464-2465, 2466-2467, 2468-2469, 2470-2471, 2472-2473, 2474-2475, 2476-2477, 2478-2479, 2480-2481, 2482-2483, 2484-2485, 2486-2487, 2488-2489, 2490-2491, 2492-2493, 2494-2495, 2496-2497, 2498-2499, 2500-2501, 2502-2503, 2504-2505, 2506-2507, 2508-2509, 2510-2511, 2512-2513, 2514-2515, 2516-2517, 2518-2519, 2520-2521, 2522-2523, 2524-2525, 2526-2527, 2528-2529, 2530-2531, 2532-2533, 2534-2535, 2536-2537, 2538-2539, 2540-2541, 2542-2543, 2544-2545, 2546-2547, 2548-2549, 2550-2551, 2552-2553, 2554-2555, 2556-2557, 2558-2559, 2560-2561, 2562-2563, 2564-2565, 2566-2567, 2568-2569, 2570-2571, 2572-2573, 2574-2575, 2576-2577, 2578-2579, 2580-2581, 2582-2583, 2584-2585, 2586-2587, 2588-2589, 2590-2591, 2592-2593, 2594-2595, 2596-2597, 2598-2599, 2600-2601, 2602-2603, 2604-2605, 2606-2607, 2608-2609, 2610-2611, 2612-2613, 2614-2615, 2616-2617, 2618-2619, 2620-2621, 2622-2623, 2624-2625, 2626-2627, 2628-2629, 2630-2631, 2632-2633, 2634-2635, 2636-2637, 2638-2639, 2640-2641, 2642-2643, 2644-2645, 2646-2647, 2648-2649, 2650-2651, 2652-2653, 2654-2655, 2656-2657, 2658-2659, 2660-2661, 2662-2663, 2664-2665, 2666-2667, 2668-2669, 2670-2671, 2672-2673, 2674-2675, 2676-2677, 2678-2679, 2680-2681, 2682-2683, 2684-2685, 2686-2687, 2688-2689, 2690-2691, 2692-2693, 2694-2695, 2696-2697, 2698-2699, 2700-2701, 2702-2703, 2704-2705, 2706-2707, 2708-2709, 2710-2711, 2712-2713, 2714-2715, 2716-2717, 2718-2719, 2720-2721, 2722-2723, 2724-2725, 2726-2727, 2728-2729, 2730-2731, 2732-2733, 2734-2735, 2736-2737, 2738-2739, 2740-2741, 2742-2743, 2744-2745, 2746-2747, 2748-2749, 2750-2751, 2752-2753, 2754-2755, 2756-2757, 2758-2759, 2760-2761, 2762-2763, 2764-2765, 2766-2767, 2768-2769, 2770-2771, 2772-2773, 2774-2775, 2776-2777, 2778-2779, 2780-2781, 2782-2783, 2784-2785, 2786-2787, 2788-2789, 2790-2791, 2792-2793, 2794-2795, 2796-2797, 2798-2799, 2800-2801, 2802-2803, 2804-2805, 2806-2807, 2808-2809, 2810-2811, 2812-2813, 2814-2815, 2816-2817, 2818-2819, 2820-2821, 2822-2823, 2824-2825, 2826-2827, 2828-2829, 2830-2831, 2832-2833, 2834-2835, 2836-2837, 2838-2839, 2840-2841, 2842-2843, 2844-2845, 2846-2847, 2848-2849, 2850-2851, 2852-2853, 2854-2855, 2856-2857, 2858-2859, 2860-2861, 2862-2863, 2864-2865, 2866-2867, 2868-2869, 2870-2871, 2872-2873, 2874-2875, 2876-2877, 2878-2879, 2880-2881, 2882-2883, 2884-2885, 2886-2887, 2888-2889, 2890-2891, 2892-2893, 2894-2895, 2896-2897, 2898-2899, 2900-2901, 2902-2903, 2904-2905, 2906-2907, 2908-2909, 2910-2911, 2912-2913, 2914-2915, 2916-2917, 2918-2919, 2920-2921, 2922-2923, 2924-2925, 2926-2927, 2928-2929, 2930-2931, 2932-2933, 2934-2935, 2936-2937, 2938-2939, 2940-2941, 2942-2943, 2944-2945, 2946-2947, 2948-2949, 2950-2951, 2952-2953, 2954-2955, 2956-2957, 2958-2959, 2960-2961, 2962-2963, 2964-2965, 2966-2967, 2968-2969, 2970-2971, 2972-2973, 2974-2975, 2976-2977, 2978-2979, 2980-2981, 2982-2983, 2984-2985, 2986-2987, 2988-2989, 2990-2991, 2992-2993, 2994-2995, 2996-2997, 2998-2999, 3000-3001, 3002-3003, 3004-3005, 3006-3007, 3008-3009, 3010-3011, 3012-3013, 3014-3015, 3016-3017, 3018-3019, 3020-3021, 3022-3023, 3024-3025, 3026-3027, 3028-3029, 3030-3031, 3032-3033, 3034-3035, 3036-3037, 3038-3039, 3040-3041, 3042-3043, 3044-3045, 3046-3047, 3048-3049, 3050-3051, 3052-3053, 3054-3055, 3056-3057, 3058-3059, 3060-3061, 3062-3063, 3064-3065, 3066-3067, 3068-3069, 3070-3071, 3072-3073, 3074-3075, 3076-3077, 3078-3079, 3080-3081, 3082-3083, 3084-3085, 3086-3087, 3088-3089, 3090-3091, 3092-3093, 3094-3095, 3096-3097, 3098-3099, 3100-3101, 3102-3103, 3104-3105, 3106-3107, 3108-3109, 3110-3111, 3112-3113, 3114-3115, 3116-3117, 3118-3119, 3120-3121, 3122-3123, 3124-3125, 3126-3127, 3128-3129, 3130-3131, 3132-3133, 3134-3135, 3136-3137, 3138-3139, 3140-3141, 3142-3143, 3144-3145, 3146-3147, 3148-3149, 3150-3151, 3152-3153, 3154-3155, 3156-3157, 3158-3159, 3160-3161, 3162-3163, 3164-3165, 3166-3167, 3168-3169, 3170-3171, 3172-3173, 3174-3175, 3176-3177, 3178-3179, 3180-3181, 3182-3183, 3184-3185, 3186-3187, 3188-3189, 3190-3191, 3192-3193, 3194-3195, 3196-3197, 3198-3199, 3200-3201, 3202-3203, 3204-3205, 3206-3207, 3208-3209, 3210-3211, 3212-3213, 3214-3215, 3216-3217, 3218-3219, 3220-3221, 3222-3223, 3224-3225, 3226-3227, 3228-3229, 3230-3231, 3232-3233, 3234-3235, 3236-3237, 3238-3239, 3240-3241, 3242-3243, 3244-3245, 3246-3247, 3248-3249, 3250-3251, 3252-3253, 3254-3255, 3256-3257, 3258-3259, 3260-3261, 3262-3263, 3264-3265, 3266-3267, 3268-3269, 3270-3271, 3272-3273, 3274-3275, 3276-3277, 3278-3279, 3280-3281, 3282-3283, 3284-3285, 3286-3287, 3288-3289, 3290-3291, 3292-3293, 3294-3295, 3296-3297, 3298-3299, 3300-3301, 3302-3303, 3304-3305, 3306-3307, 3308-3309, 3310-3311, 3312-3313, 3314-3315, 3316-3317, 3318-3319, 3320-3321, 3322-3323, 3324-3325, 3326-3327, 3328-3329, 3330-3331, 3332-3333, 3334-3335, 3336-3337, 3338-3339, 3340-3341, 3342-3343, 3344-3345, 3346-3347, 3348-3349, 3350-3351, 3352-3353, 3354-3355, 3356-3357, 3358-3359, 3360-3361, 3362-3363, 3364-3365, 3366-3367, 3368-3369, 3370-3371, 3372-3373, 3374-3375, 3376-3377, 3378-3379, 3380-3381, 3382-3383, 3384-3385, 3386-3387, 3388-3389, 3390-3391, 3392-3393, 3394-3395, 3396-3397, 3398-3399, 3400-3401, 3402-3403, 3404-3405, 3406-3407, 3408-3409, 3410-3411, 3412-3413, 3414-3415, 3416-3417, 3418-3419, 3420-3421, 3422-3423, 3424-3425, 3426-3427, 3428-3429, 3430-3431, 3432-3433, 3434-3435, 3436-3437, 3438-3439, 3440-3441, 3442-3443, 3444-3445, 3446-3447, 3448-3449, 3450-3451, 3452-3453, 3454-3455, 3456-3457, 3458-3459, 3460-3461, 3462-3463, 3464-3465, 3466-3467, 3468-3469, 3470-3471, 3472-3473, 3474-3475, 3476-3477, 3478-3479, 3480-3481, 3482-3483, 3484-3485, 3486-3487, 3488-3489, 3490-3491, 3492-3493, 3494-3495, 3496-3497, 3498-3499, 3500-3501, 3502-3503, 3504-3505, 3506-3507, 3508-3509, 3510-3511, 3512-3513, 3514-3515, 3516-3517, 3518-3519, 3520-3521, 3522-3523, 3524-3525, 3526-3527, 3528-3529, 3530-3531, 3532-3533, 3534-3535, 3536-3537, 3538-3539, 3540-3541, 3542-3543, 3544-3545, 3546-3547, 3548-3549, 3550-3551, 3552-3553, 3554-3555, 3556-3557, 3558-3559, 3560-3561, 3562-3563, 3564-3565, 3566-3567, 3568-3569, 3570-3571, 3572-3573, 3574-3575, 3576-3577, 3578-3579, 3580-3581, 3582-3583, 3584-3585, 3586-3587, 3588-3589, 3590-3591, 3592-3593, 3594-3595, 3596-3597, 3598-3599, 3600-3601, 3602-3603, 3604-3605, 3606-3607, 3608-3609, 3610-3611, 3612-3613, 3614-3615, 3616-3617, 3618-3619, 3620-3621, 3622-3623, 3624-3625, 3626-3627, 3628-3629, 3630-3631, 3632-3633, 3634-3635, 3636-3637, 3638-3639, 3640-3641, 3642-3643, 3644-3645, 3646-3647, 3648-3649, 3650-3651, 3652-3653, 3654-3655, 3656-3657, 3658-3659, 3660-3661, 3662-3663, 3664-3665, 3666-3667, 3668-3669, 3670-3671, 3672-3673, 3674-3675, 3676-3677, 3678-3679, 3680-3681, 3682-3683, 3684-3685, 3686-3687, 3688-3689, 3690-3691, 3692-3693, 3694-3695, 3696-3697, 3698-3699, 3700-3701, 3702-3703, 3704-3705, 3706-3707, 3708-3709, 3710-3711, 3712-3713, 3714-3715, 3716-3717, 3718-3719, 3720-3721, 3722-3723, 3724-3725, 3726-3727, 3728-3729, 3730-3731, 3732-3733, 3734-3735, 3736-3737, 3738-3739, 3740-3741, 3742-3743, 3744-3745, 3746-3747, 3748-3749, 3750-3751, 3752-3753, 3754-3755, 3756-3757, 3758-3759, 3760-3761, 3762-3763, 3764-3765, 3766-3767, 3768-3769, 3770-3771, 3772-3773, 3774-3775, 3776-3777, 3778-3779, 3780-3781, 3782-3783, 3784-3785, 3786-3787, 3788-3789, 3790-3791, 3792-3793, 3794-3795, 3796-3797, 3798-3799, 3800-3801, 3802-3803, 3804-3805, 3806-3807, 3808-3809, 3810-3811, 3812-3813, 3814-3815, 3816-3817, 3818-3819, 3820-3821, 3822-3823, 3824-3825, 3826-3827, 3828-3829, 3830-3831, 3832-3833, 3834-3835, 3836-3837, 3838-3839, 3840-3841, 3842-3843, 3844-3845, 3846-3847, 3848-3849, 3850-3851, 3852-3853, 3854-3855, 3856-3857, 3858-3859, 3860-3861, 3862-3863, 3864-3865, 3866-3867, 3868-3869, 3870-3871, 3872-3873, 3874-3875, 3876-3877, 3878-3879, 3880-3881, 3882-3883, 3884-3885, 3886-3887, 3888-3889, 3890-3891, 3892-3893, 3894-3895, 3896-3897, 3898-3899, 3900-3901, 3902-3903, 3904-3905, 3906-3907, 3908-3909, 3910-3911, 3912-3913, 3914-3915, 3916-3917, 3918-3919, 3920-3921, 3922-3923, 3924-3925, 3926-3927, 3928-3929, 3930-3931, 3932-3933, 3934-3935, 3936-3937, 3938-3939, 3940-3941, 3942-3943, 3944-3945, 3946-3947, 3948-3949, 3950-3951, 3952-3953, 3954-3955, 3956-3957, 3958-3959, 3960-3961, 3962-3963, 3964-3965, 3966-3967, 3968-3969, 3970-3971, 3972-3973, 3974-3975, 3976-3977, 3978-3979, 3980-3981, 3982-3983, 3984-3985, 3986-3987, 3988-3989, 3990-3991, 3992-3993, 3994-3995, 3996-3997, 3998-3999, 4000-4001, 4002-4003, 4004-4005, 4006-4007, 4008-4009, 4010-4011, 4012-4013, 4014-4015, 4016-4017, 4018-4019, 4020-4021, 4022-4023

It was the strangest phase of life one can imagine. It was a beggar's revel. There was nothing doing in the district--no mining--no milling--no productive effort--no income--and not enough money in the entire camp to buy a corner lot in an eastern village, hardly; and yet a stranger would have supposed he was walking among bloated millionaires.¹⁹

Many facts were exaggerated in Roughing It, but the above description was accurate. DeLancey Ferguson said, "The center of activity in the mining country had shifted from gambling with pick and shovel to gambling with stocks. It was Wall Street of the Coolidge era on a local scale."²⁰

William Wright, the Dan De Quille of Virginia City journalistic fame,²¹ and J. Ross Browne, who traveled through the mining country,²² both agreed that Washoe was in a speculative frenzy. Little actual mining was done, but theoretical millions changed hands daily in the trading of stock.

Twain actually thought he would make his fortune in mining stock, as many of his letters, written at that time indicated. He said assuredly to Orion:

We have got to wait six weeks, anyhow, for a dividend, maybe longer--but that it will come there is no shadow of a doubt, I have got the thing sifted down to a dead moral certainty. I own one-eighth of the new "Monitor Ledge, Clemens Company," and money can't buy a foot of

¹⁹Ibid., I, 233-34.

²⁰Ferguson, op. cit., p. 70.

²¹William Wright, The Big Bonanza (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1947), p. 64.

²²J. Ross Browne, "A Peep at Washoe," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XXII (January, 1861), 156.

It was the uttermost phase of life one can imagine. It was a beggar's revel. There was nothing doing in the district--no mining--no milling--no productive effort--no income--and not enough money in the entire camp to buy a corner lot in an eastern village, hardly; and yet a stranger would have supposed he was walking among bloated millionaires.¹⁹

Many facts were exaggerated in Reveries, but the above description was accurate. Delaney Ferguson said the center of activity in the mining country had shifted from gambling with pick and shovel to gambling with stocks. It was Wall Street of the Goodyear era on a local scale.²⁰ William Wright, the San Francisco City Journalistic team, and J. Ross Browne, who traveled through the mining country,²¹ both agreed that Delaney was in a spot--native frenzy. Little actual mining was done, but thousands millions changed hands daily in the trading of stock. Twain actually thought he would make his fortune in mining stock, as many of his readers, written at that time indicated. He said anxiously to Orion:

We have got to wait six weeks, anyhow, for a dividend. Maybe longer--but that is all right, there is no shadow of a doubt, I have got the thing lifted down to a dead level certainly. I am one-eighth of the new "Honor" ledge, Clements Company, and money can't buy a lot of

¹⁹Ibid., I, 233-34.
²⁰Ferguson, op. cit., p. 70.
²¹William Wright, The Big Bonanza (New York: A. A. Knopf, 1907), p. 64.
²²J. Ross Browne, "A Trip at Washoe," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XXII (January, 1881), 156.

it; because I know it to contain our fortune.²³

Twain later added, "When you and I came out here, we did not expect '63 or '64 to find us rich men--and if that proposition had been made, we would have accepted it gladly. Now, it is made."²⁴ Even if the mines did not succeed, Twain had an ace up his sleeve, as shown in this letter to his mother in 1862:

Yesterday one of my old Esmeralda friends, Bob Howland, arrived here, and I have had a talk with him. He owns with me in the "Horatio and Derby" ledge. He says our tunnel is in 52 feet, and a small stream of water has been struck, which bids fair to become a "big thing" by the time the ledge is reached--sufficient to supply a mill. Now, if you know anything of the value of water, here, you would perceive at a glance that if the water should amount to 50 or 100 inches, we wouldn't care whether school kept or not. If the ledge should prove to be worthless, we'd sell the water for money enough to give us quite a lift.²⁵

Even though Twain ultimately realized that mining probably would never make him wealthy, he was too much in this wild movement to become an effective satirist of it. In Roughing It he lamented the passing of the mining towns' heyday, and said it was pitiful that so many of the men were now dead, but he hastened to assure the readers that the mining population was a ". . . peerless and magnificent

²³Clemens, Mark Twain Letters, op. cit., I, 73.

²⁴Ibid., I, 74.

²⁵Ibid., I, 64.

11: because I know it to contain our fortune. 23

Twain later added, "When you and I came out here, we did not expect '03 or '04 to find us rich men--and if that proposition had been made, we would have accepted it gladly. Now, if it

made." 24 Even if the mine did not succeed, Twain had an

see up his sleeve, as shown in this letter to his mother in

1862:

Yesterday one of my old Kameralda friends, Bob Lowland, arrived here, and I have had a talk with him. He came with me in the "Honorable and Dearly" ledge. He says our tunnel is in 52 feet, and a small stream of water has been struck, which will take to become a "big thing" by the time the ledge is reached--sufficient to supply a mill. Now, if you know anything of the value of water here, you would perceive at a glance that if the water should amount to 50 or 100 inches, we wouldn't care whether a school kept or not. If the ledge should prove to be worthless, we'd sell the water for money enough to give us quite a lift. 25

Even though Twain ultimately realized that mining

probably would never make him wealthy, he was too much in

this wild movement to become an effective satirist of it.

In Roughing It he lamented the passing of the mining town.

heyday, and said it was pitiful that so many of the men were

now dead, but he hastened to assure the readers that the

mining population was a "... people and magnificent

23: Twain's letter to Mary Twain, pp. 111, 112.

24: Id., 1, 74.

25: Id., 1, 64.

manhood--the very pick and choice of the world's glorious ones."²⁶ He concluded:

It was a splendid population--for all the slow, sleepy, sluggish-brained sloths staid at home--you never find that sort of people among pioneers--you cannot build pioneers out of that sort of material. It was a population that gave to California a name for getting up astounding enterprises and rushing them through with a magnificent dash and daring and recklessness of cost or consequences, which she bears unto this day--and when she projects a new surprise, the grave world smiles as usual, and says, "Well, that is California all over."²⁷

This is not criticism of the abuses found in the westward movement which was brought about by the gold and silver rushes. It is idealization of a phenomenal period in American history.

During his stay in Virginia City, Nevada, Twain turned to journalism and became an important member of the Virginia City Enterprise, one of the leading newspapers west of the Mississippi. If we would believe some of the critics, it is here that Twain became a truly great social satirist. DeLancey Ferguson said, "His outspoken comments upon legislative proceedings, good and bad, had given him fame and influence in the capital of the territory. . . ."²⁸ Effie Mona Mack added:

During the three years 1861-1864 he spent in the land of Washoe, he observed how men lived in frontier society,

²⁶Clemens, Roughing It., op. cit., II, 156.

²⁷Ibid., II, 157.

²⁸Ferguson, op. cit., p. 92.

manhood--the very pick and choice of the world's famous

ones. He concluded:

It was a splendid population--for all the slow, sleepy, and half-brained stuff at home--you never find that sort of people among pioneers--you cannot build pioneers out of that sort of material. It was a race of men that gave to California a name for getting up astounding enterprises and making them through with a magnificent dash and daring and recklessness of soul and confidence, which and heart with this day--and when the projects a new territory, the grave would rather as usual, and say, "Well, that is California all over."

This is not criticism of the abuses found in the westward

movement which was brought about by the gold and silver

rushes. It is idealization of a phenomenal period in

American history.

During his stay in Virginia City, Nevada, Wells turned

to journalism and became an important member of the Virginia

City Enterprise, one of the leading newspapers west of the

Mississippi. If we could believe some of the critics, it is

here that Wells became a truly great social critic. De-

laney Ferguson said, "His outspoken comments upon legis-

lative proceedings, good and bad, had given him fame and

influence in the capital of the territory. . . ." Wells

Wells Mack added:

During the three years 1861-1864 he spent in the land of Nevada, he observed how men lived in frontier society,

²⁶Chambers, Reminiscences, II, pp. 216, 217, 186.

²⁷Ibid., II, 187.

²⁸Ferguson, op. cit., p. 92.

how they behaved in their frenzied quest for gold, how mightily they dreamed and how bitterly they were disillusioned in their fool's paradise. In shrewd and biting satire he laid bare the sham, the corruption, the artifices of bunko steerers. His grotesque parodies were written in defense of human justice.²⁹

Ivan Benson was even more emphatic:

Had Mark Twain been only a humorist during his stay in the Far West, his Western writings would merit less consideration. But from the beginning he was more than just a humorist. During his Western period he became an accomplished social satirist, and with a gradually broadening scope he wrote artistically, with a variety of effects, from the coarsest burlesque to fine descriptive and informational articles.³⁰

Benson also said:

. . . He becomes during this reporting period a really important figure in public affairs. Now, his writings, although mostly still in a humorous vein, carry weight with the readers. There is almost invariably to be found in them some element of political or social criticism. His satire and irony are now being directed toward problems of some real importance in the life of the community.³¹

Several of the critics, then, consider Twain a determined social critic in his Washoe days, and to a certain extent this is true. Here Twain uttered some of his first comments upon legislatures. In "Carson Footprints," which appeared in the Sacramento Daily Record-Union in 1885, Twain told of strange footprints found in Nevada years

²⁹Mack, op. cit., p. 3.

³⁰Ivan Benson, Mark Twain's Western Years (Stanford: Stanford University Press, 1938), p. VII.

³¹Ibid., p. 101.

before:

These scientists are in an ill-concealed sweat because they cannot tell why there are so many tracks, and all going one way, all going north. It was a large legislature, dear sirs, and the saloon was north. This is history, not conjecture. For I was there--in person.³²

On the question of corruption in the legislature Twain said, in Roughing It:

The legislature sat sixty days, and passed private toll-road franchises all the time. When they adjourned it was estimated that every citizen owned about three franchises, and it was believed that unless Congress gave the Territory another degree of longitude there would not be room enough to accommodate the toll-roads. The ends of them were hanging over the boundary line everywhere like a fringe.³³

There was much corruption in the mining industry, and Twain mentioned the illegal practices often carried on by the assayers:

Assaying was a good business, and so some men engaged in it, occasionally, who were not strictly scientific and capable. One assayer got such rich results out of all specimens brought to him that in time he acquired almost a monopoly of the business. But like all men who achieve success, he became an object of envy and suspicion. The other assayers entered into a conspiracy against him, and let some prominent citizens into the secret in order to show that they meant fairly. Then they broke a little fragment off a carpenter's grindstone and got a stranger to take it to the popular scientist and get it assayed. In the course of an hour the result came--whereby it appeared that a ton of the rock would yield \$1,284.40 in silver and \$366.36 in gold!

³²Mack, op. cit., p. 110.

³³Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., I, 208.

before:

These scientists are in an ill-equipped state because they cannot tell the difference between a theory and a fact. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so.

On the question of evolution, the scientists are in a

position in

The scientists are in a position where they are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so.

There was much controversy in the early days of the

movement of the day. The scientists were not equipped with the necessary tools to do so.

They were

They were not equipped with the necessary tools to do so. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so. They are not equipped with the necessary tools to do so.

37

38

Due publication of the whole matter was made in the paper, and the popular assayer left town "between two days."³⁴

It should be noted that much of the social criticism just mentioned was written after the fact. His newspaper articles written in Virginia City have not survived, and it is not possible to evaluate properly Twain's social criticism in this period. From all reports it does seem, however, that Twain was forthright and vigorous in his protests against abuses and corruptions, although his protests were often in the form of wild burlesques. There is at least surviving proof that when he moved to San Francisco he did try on many occasions to criticize important abuses. Edward Wagenknecht said of this Pacific Coast period:

In San Francisco he is shocked by political corruption, and since the Call will not print his articles he sends them back to Joe Goodman's Enterprise. It is not long before he is being called the "Moralist of the Main," and political corruptionists, no doubt, are calling him other names as well.³⁵

³⁴Ibid., I, 283. Back in 1861 J. Ross Browne, in his "A Peep at Washoe," op. cit., p. 161., had said virtually the same thing: "A tent, a furnace, half a dozen crucibles, a bottle of acid, and a hammer, generally comprised the entire establishment; but it is worthy of remark that the assays were always satisfactory. Silver, or indications of silver, were sure to be found in every specimen. I am confident some of these learned gentlemen in the assay business could have detected the precious metals in an Irish potato or a round of cheese for a reasonable consideration."

³⁵Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 234.

The publication of the whole matter was made in the paper, and the popular assayer left town "between two days."

It should be noted that much of the social criticism just mentioned was written after the fact. His newspaper articles written in Virginia City have not survived, and it is not possible to evaluate properly Twain's social criticism in this period. From all reports it does seem, however, that Twain was forthright and vigorous in his protests against abuses and corruptions, although his protests were often in the form of wild burlesques. There is at least surviving proof that when he moved to San Francisco he did try on many occasions to criticize important abuses. Edward Wagenknecht said of this Pacific Coast period:

In San Francisco he is shocked by political corruption and since the Call will not print his articles he sends them back to Joe Goodman's Enterprise. It is not long before he is being called the "Mormonist of the West," and political corruptor, no doubt, are calling him other names as well.

3rd Ibid., I, 263. Back in 1883 J. Ross Browne, in his "A Peep at Warner," or, Life, p. 161, had said literally the same thing: "A tent, a furnace, half a dozen crucibles, a bottle of acid, and a hammer, generally comprised the entire establishment; but it is worthy of remark that the assays were always satisfactory. Silver, or indications of silver, were sure to be found in every specimen. I am confident some of these learned gentlemen in the assay business would have detected the precious metals in an Irish potato or a turnip of cheese for a reasonable consideration."

3rd Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 234.

Later portions of this thesis will describe in more detail some of Twain's satirical thrusts written during his San Francisco period. Twain was not completely exasperated with conditions in California, though, and still had faith in its future. With a mind still unclouded by later pessimism, he thought the United States was in the midst of a glorious period of growth. California was the hub of this great expansion, and in his "Farewell" to San Francisco in 1866, Twain showed his confidence and wholehearted approval of this spectacular boom. To Twain growth meant business, and big business would have "millions in it" for the Californians. The Alta California reported part of Twain's last speech before he left San Francisco:

I read the signs of the times, and I, that am no prophet, behold the things that are in store for you. Over slumbering California is stealing the dawn of a radiant future! The great China Mail Line is established, the Pacific Railroad is creeping across the continent, the commerce of the world is about to be revolutionized. California is Crown Princess of the new dispensation. She stands in the centre of the grand highway of the nations; she stands midway between the Old World and the New, and both shall pay her tribute. From the far East and from Europe, multitudes of stout hearts and willing hands are preparing to flock hither; to throng her hamlets and villages; to till her fruitful soil; to unveil the riches of her countless mines; to build up an empire on these distant shores that will shame the bravest dreams of her visionaries. From the opulent lands of the Orient, from India, from China, Japan, the Amoor; from tributary regions that stretch from the arctic circle to the equator, is about to pour in upon her the princely commerce of a teeming population of four hundred and fifty million souls. Half the world stands ready to lay its contributions at

later portions of this thesis will describe in more detail some of Twain's satirical forecasts written during his San Francisco period. Twain was not completely exasperated with conditions in California, though, and still had faith in its future. With a mind still unclouded by later pessimism, he thought the United States was in the midst of a glorious period of growth. California was the hub of this great expansion, and in his "Foreword" to San Francisco in 1866, Twain showed his confidence and wholehearted approval of this spectacular boom. To Twain growth meant business, and his business would have "allies in 12" for the Californians. The San Francisco reported part of Twain's last speech before he left San Francisco:

I read the signs of the times, and I, that am no prophet, behold the things that are in store for you. Over all America California is stealing the dawn of a radiant future! The great China Mail line is established, the Pacific Railroad is crossing across the continent, the commerce of the world is about to be revolutionized. California is Crown Princess of the new dispensation. She stands in the center of the grand highway of the nation; she stands midway between the Old World and the New, and both shall pay her tribute. From the Far East and from Europe, multitudes of stout hearts and willing hands are pressing to flock hither; to turn her hamlets and villages; to fill her fruitful soil; to unveil the riches of her countless mines; to build up an empire on these distant shores that will share the proudest dreams of her visionaries. From the opulent lands of the Orient, from India, from China, Japan, the Amazon; from tributary regions that stretch from the Arctic circle to the equator, is about to pour in upon her the princely commerce of a teeming population of four hundred and fifty million souls. Half the world stands ready to lay its contributions at

her feet! Has any other State so brilliant a future?
Has any other city a future like San Francisco?³⁶

It has been shown that Twain, although conscious of graft and corruption, and sincere in his efforts to curb them, was not clear-headed enough to satirize the many abuses connected directly with the great movement of westward expansion in the United States. He was far too much a product of his age to ever be a successful protest against it. The opening west meant money for many people, and Twain was always tempted by the lures of Mammon. He had said in Roughing It:

Vice flourished luxuriantly during the heyday of our "flush times." The saloons were overburdened with custom; so were the police courts, the gambling dens, the brothels, and the jails--unfailing signs of high prosperity in a mining region--in any region, for that matter. Is it not so? A crowded police court docket is the surest of all signs that trade is brisk and money plenty.³⁷

It would seem that he would even accept the vice--because it automatically meant more money. Other portions of this thesis will continue to show that an almost direct relation existed between Twain's social protests and the amount of money he or his social class could possibly earn by refraining from social protest.

³⁶Benson, op. cit., p. 212.

³⁷Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 96.

Has any other city a larger population?
Has any other city a larger population?

It has been shown that Twain, although a resident of

grief and corruption, and engaged in his efforts to
then, was not short-headed enough to realize the very things
connected directly with the gross movement of material
passion in the United States. He was far too much a product
of his age to ever be a successful protest against it. His
opening west meant money for every body, and Twain was al-
ways tempted by the lure of money. He had seen in Europe

the

the "American" journey. He was not a man of
"times." The money was everywhere, and he
that so were the police, the gambling, the
brothels, and the jails - everything aimed at his
party in a single stroke - in any case, he was not
for. Is it not a pity that Twain's protest
the struggle of all things that were in the world
plenty.

It would seem that he would have a good time - because it
automatically meant more money. Other positions in life
these will continue to show that an almost silent protest
existed between Twain's social protest and the money of
money he or his social class could hardly earn by protest-
ing from social protest.

38
Clarence, Harding is an anti-
38
Clarence, Harding is an anti-

III. EXPANSION ABROAD

Mark Twain was also strikingly inconsistent on the question of foreign expansion. Many critics have taken for granted the statement that he championed the cause of liberty and supported all minorities being oppressed by larger powers. It should be pointed out, however, that his sympathies were usually aroused only if the aggressor nation employed cruel methods. If the imperialistic power seemed to be helping the smaller nation in any way, or if business would be aided by annexing a country, he was in favor of the expansion.

One of the imperialistic movements both favored and opposed by him was the annexation of the Sandwich Islands. Walter Francis Frear said, "Mark Twain, during and after his visit in Hawaii, was an ardent advocate of annexation."³⁸ It is difficult, however, to accept this statement without qualifications when one considers what Twain had to say on the subject. In his notebook in 1867 he said the Sandwich Islanders were worse off then than ever before, and that the first white man who landed there was a curse to them.³⁹ In

³⁸Walter Francis Frear, Mark Twain and Hawaii (Chicago: Lakeside Press, 1947), p. 215.

³⁹Samuel Langhorne Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, Albert Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1935), p. 10.

Roughing It he said even though many native taboos had been discarded because of the white man, it took the degrading effects of whisky to secure these changes.⁴⁰ He also pointed out that the white man's arrival had caused a marked breakdown in native morals. "All this ameliorating cultivation has at last built up in the native women a profound respect for chastity--in other people."⁴¹ Perhaps his most outspoken public comments against annexation were two letters to the New York Daily Tribune early in 1873. The first, published on January 6, read in part as follows:

The natives of the islands number only about 50,000, and the whites about 3,000, chiefly Americans. According to Capt. Cook, the natives numbered 400,000 less than a hundred years ago. But the traders brought labor and diseases--in other words, long, deliberate, infallible destruction; and the missionaries brought the means of grace and got them ready. So the two forces are working along harmoniously, and anybody who knows anything about figures can tell you exactly when the last Kanaka will be in Abraham's bosom and his islands in the hands of the whites.⁴²

The second is one of Twain's best passages of timely social criticism written for the public. Published in the Tribune on January 9, it appears here in full:

WHY SHOULD WE ANNEX

Now, let us annex the islands. Think how we could build up that whaling trade! (Though under our courts and judges it might soon be as impossible for whaleships

⁴⁰Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 283.

⁴¹Ibid., II, 233.

⁴²Frear, op. cit., p. 490.

Roundly it is said even though many native tribes had been discarded because of the white man, it took the carrying of- fects of whisky to secure these changes.¹⁰ He also pointed out that the white man's arrival had caused a marked break- down in native morals. "All this smothering civilization has at last built up in the native women a profound respect for chastity--in other people."¹¹ Perhaps his most out- spoken public comments against annexation were two letters to the New York Daily Tribune early in 1873. The first, published on January 6, read in part as follows:

The natives of the islands number only about 20,000 and the whites about 3,000, chiefly Americans. According to Capt. Cook, the natives numbered 100,000 less than a hundred years ago. But the traders brought labor and diseases--in other words, long, deliberate, inflexible destruction; and the missionaries brought the means of grace and got them ready. So the two forces are working along harmoniously, and anybody who knows anything about things can tell you exactly when the last remnants will be in Abraham's bosom and his islands in the hands of the whites.¹²

The second is one of Twain's best passages of timely social criticism written for the public. Published in the Tribune on January 9, it appears here in full:

WHY SHOULD WE ANNEX

Now, let us annex the islands. Think how we could build up that whaling trade! (Though under our courts and judges it might soon be as impossible for whalships

¹⁰Clements, Roundly II, pp. cit., II, 283.
¹¹Ibid., II, 283.
¹²Ibid., pp. cit., p. 120.

to rendezvous there without being fleeced and "pulled" by sailors and pettifoggers as it is now in San Francisco--a place the skippers shun as they would rocks and shoals. Let us annex. We could make sugar enough there to supply all America, perhaps, and the prices would be very easy with the duties removed. And then we would have such a fine half-way house for our Pacific-lying ships; and such a convenient supply depot and such a commanding sentry-box for an armed squadron; and we could raise cotton and coffee there and make it pay pretty well, with the duties off and capital easier to get at. And then we would own the mightiest volcano on earth--Kilauea! Barnum could run it--he understands fires now. Let us annex, by all means. We could pacify Prince Bill and other nobles easily enough--put them on a reservation. Nothing pleases a savage like a reservation--a reservation where he has his annual hoes, and Bibles and blankets to trade for powder and whisky--a sweet Arcadian retreat fenced in with soldiers. By annexing, we would get all those 50,000 natives cheap as dirt, with their morals and other diseases thrown in. No expense for education--they are already educated; no need to convert them--they are already converted; no expense to clothe them--for obvious reasons.

We must annex those people. We can afflict them with our wise and beneficent governments. We can introduce the novelty of thieves, all the way up from street-car pickpockets to municipal robbers and Government defaulters, and show them how amusing it is to arrest them and try them and then turn them loose--some for cash and some for "political influence." We can make them ashamed of their simple and primitive justice. We can do away with their occasional hangings for murder, and let them have Judge Pratt to teach them how to save imperiled Avery-assassins to society. We can give them some Barnards to keep their money corporations out of difficulties. We can give them juries composed entirely of the most simple and charming leatherheads. We can give them railway corporations who will buy their Legislature like old clothes, and run over their best citizens and complain of the corpses for smearing their unpleasant juices on the track. In place of harmless and vapid Harris, we can give them Tweed. We can let them have Connolly; we can loan them Sweeney; we can furnish them some Jay Goulds who will do away with their old-time notion that stealing is not respectable. We can confer Woodhull and Claflin on them. And George Francis Train. We can give them lecturers! I will go myself.

to render them without being flayed and killed
by sailors and porters as it is now in the
class--a piece of paper when as they would
and shales. Let us annex. We could make sugar
where to supply all America, perhaps, and the
would be very easy with the Indian reserves, and
we would have such a fine half-way house for our
flying ships and such a convenient supply depot and
a commanding vantage-box for an armed squadron; and we
could raise cotton and other things there and make it pay
pretty well, with the Indian oil and vegetable
get at. And then we could own the richest
on earth--Kilnash. Barren could run it--no
fines now. Let us annex. We could easily
Prince Bill and other nobles easily enough--but then on
a reservation. Nothing pleases a savage like a reser-
vation--a reservation where he has his annual
Bibles and blankets to trade for powder and whisky--
sweet Arabian tobacco landed in with soldiers. By an-
nexing, we would get all those 50,000 natives
first, with their morals and other diseases thrown in.
No expense for education--they are already educated; no
need to convert them--they are already converted; no
expense to clothe them--for obvious reasons.

We must annex these people. We can afford to
our vast and beneficent governments. We can introduce
the novelty of slavery. All the way up from west-coast
placemats to municipal reform and government do-
lancers, and show them how amusing it is to arrest them
and try them and then turn them loose--some for cash and
some for "political influence." We can make them ashamed
of their stumps and primitive justice. We can do away
with their occasional hangings for murder, and let them
have judges first to decide them how to save themselves
every-annexing to society. We can give them some per-
nards to keep their money corporations out of city-
cruises. We can give them juries composed entirely of
the most stamper and cheating leatherheads. We can give
them railway corporations who will buy their best citizens and
like old clothes, and run over their best citizens and
complain of the corpses for smearing their uniforms
jakes on the track. In place of business and vespertine
Harris, we can give them feed. We can let them have
Connolly; we can loan them Gwynne; we can furnish them
some Jay Goulds who will do away with their old-time
notion that stealing is not respectable. We can open
Woodhull and Claflin on them. And George Francis Train.
We can give them lecturers! I will go myself.

We can make that little bunch of sleepy islands the hottest corner on earth, and array it in the moral splendor of our high and holy civilization. Annexation is what the poor islanders need. "Shall we to men benighted, the lamp of life deny?"⁴³

Despite these effective comments in opposition to annexation, Twain had several reasons in favor of the move. Frear believed one of these reasons was a feeling of patriotic imperialism. Annexation of the Sandwich Islands by some world power seemed imminent, but England, and especially France, seemed more likely to succeed than the United States. Twain's desire for his own country to annex the islands came then from a feeling of patriotic pride.⁴⁴

In almost direct opposition to some of his previous arguments against annexation, Twain pointed out several times that the white man's civilization had been a blessing to the natives. In Roughing It Twain reminded the reader of the savagery in the old pagan times, and then stated how the missionaries in the Sandwich Islands have clothed, fed, and educated the natives; given them freedom, and delivered them from tyranny.⁴⁵ On February 8, 1873, the Brooklyn Eagle quoted from a lecture by Twain in which he seriously repeated

⁴³Ibid., pp. 499-500.

⁴⁴Ibid., p. 35.

⁴⁵Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 218.

We can agree that little bunch of sleepy islands the hottest corner on earth, and every is in the next chapter of our high and holy civilization. Annexation is what the poor islanders need. "Should we to men be-nighted, the lamp of life deny?"

Despite these effective comments in opposition to an-

nexation, Twain had several reasons in favor of the move. First, he believed one of these reasons was a feeling of patriotic imperialism. Annexation of the Sandwich Islands by some world power seemed imminent, but England, and especially France, seemed more likely to succeed than the United States. Twain's desire for his own country to annex the islands was then from a feeling of patriotic pride.¹⁴

In almost direct opposition to some of his previous arguments against annexation, Twain pointed out several things that the white man's civilization had been a blessing to the natives. In Hannibal II Twain reminded the reader of the savagery in the old pagan times, and then stated how the missionaries in the Sandwich Islands have clothed, fed, and educated the natives; given them freedom, and delivered them from tyranny.¹⁵ On February 8, 1873, the Evangelist said: "quoted from a lecture by Twain in which he seriously requested

¹⁴ Ibid., pp. 499-500.

¹⁵ Ibid., p. 35.

¹⁶ Evangelist, November 15, pp. 212, 17, 218.

many of the above statements, and seemingly adopted a "white-man's burden" attitude. Twain had said:

But by and by the American missionaries came and they struck off the shackles from the whole race, breaking the power of the Kings and Chiefs. They set the common man free, elevated his wife to a position of equality, and gave a spot of land to each to hold forever. They set up schools and churches and imbued them with the spirit of the Christian Religion. If they had had the power to augment the capacities of the people they could have made them perfect, and they would have done it, no doubt.

The missionaries taught the whole nation to read and write with facility, in the native tongue. I don't suppose there is today a single uneducated person above eight years of age in the Sandwich Islands. It is the best educated country in the world, I believe, not excepting some portions of the United States. That has been all done by the American missionaries.⁴⁶

Probably the real reason why he desired American annexation of the Sandwich Islands was financial. Ferguson said, "California was keenly interested in Hawaii--still called the Sandwich Islands--because of its commercial possibilities, especially sugar."⁴⁷ Twain was also interested in the commercial possibilities, although he had no money of his own at stake. In his first letter to the New York Daily Tribune in 1873, he had mentioned the heavy duty Hawaiian planters were forced to pay in trade with the United States. He declared that, ". . . if we were to annex the islands and do away with that crushing duty . . . some of those heavy

⁴⁶Frear, op. cit., p. 433.

⁴⁷Ferguson, op. cit., p. 106.

many of the above statements, and especially adopted a
"white-man's burden" attitude. Twain had said

But by and by the American missionaries came and they
struck off the shackles from the whole race, breaking the
power of the King and Chiefs. They set the common man
free, elevated him with a coalition of equality, and
gave a spot of land to each to hold forever. They set
up schools and churches and laid down the spirit
of the Christian religion. If they had had the power
to suggest the opposition of the people they would have
made them perfect, and they would have done it, no doubt.

The missionaries taught the whole nation to read and
write with facility. In the native tongue, I doubt not
there is today a single uneducated person about
eight years of age in the Sandwich Islands. It is the
best educated country in the world, I believe, not ex-
cepting some portions of the United States. That has
been all done by the American missionaries.

Probably the real reason why the United States has
no objection of the Sandwich Islands was this: Twain
said, "California was keenly interested in Hawaii--still
called the Sandwich Islands--because of its commercial
possibilities, especially sugar." Twain was also interested
in the commercial possibilities, although he had no money of
his own at stake. In his first letter to the New York
Tribune in 1873, he had mentioned the heavy duty Hawaiian
planters were forced to pay in trade with the United States.
He declared that, "... it was worse to annex the Islands and
do away with that crushing duty..." Some of those heavy

Twain, pp. 111, 112, 113.
Turgenev, pp. 111, 112, 113.

planters who can hardly keep their heads above water now, would clear \$75,000 a year and upward."⁴⁸ He might have been somewhat ironical at this spot, but in light of his Sellers-like disposition, it seems credible that he would favor the increased business. When in Hawaii in 1866 he said in his third letter to the Sacramento Union that the importance of the islands to the United States was the trade which paid well. Said Twain, "There can be no better reason than that."⁴⁹ In his first lecture in San Francisco, October 2, 1866, he probably made his most candid admission of why he favored annexation. He had been speaking of the sugar industry, and then concluded:

I have dwelt upon this subject to show you that these islands have a genuine importance to America--an importance which is not generally appreciated by our citizens. They pay revenues into the United States Treasury now amounting to over a half a million a year.

I do not know what the sugar yield of the world is now, but ten years ago, according to the Patent Office reports, it was 800,000 hogsheads. The Sandwich Islands, properly cultivated by go-ahead Americans, are capable of providing one-third as much themselves. With the Pacific Railroad built, the great China Mail Line of steamers touching at Honolulu--we could stock the islands with Americans and supply a third of the civilized world with sugar--and with the silkiest, longest-stapled cotton this side of the South Seas, and the very best quality of rice. . . . The property has got to fall to some heir, and why not the United States?⁵⁰

⁴⁸Frear, op. cit., p. 493.

⁴⁹Ibid., p. 271.

⁵⁰Paine, op. cit., III, 1601.

planters who can hardly keep their heads above water now, would clear \$25,000 a year and upward. He might have been somewhat cynical at this spot, but in light of his California-like disposition, it seems credible that he would favor the increased business. When in Hawaii in 1886 he said in his third letter to the Sacramento Union that the importance of the islands to the United States was the trade which paid well. Said Twain, "There can be no better reason than that." In his first lecture in San Francisco, October 5, 1886, he probably made his most candid admission of why he favored annexation. He had been speaking of the sugar industry, and then concluded:

I have dwelt upon this subject because you that these islands have a genuine importance in the United States, a portance which is not generally appreciated by our citizens. They pay revenues into the United States Treasury now amounting to over a half million a year. I do not know what the sugar yield of the world is now, but ten years ago, according to the latest Official Report, it was 800,000 hogheads. The Hawaiian Islands properly cultivated by increased agriculture, are capable of producing one-third as much themselves. With the Pacific Railroad built, the great China Mail line of steamers touching at Honolulu--we could stock the islands with Americans and supply a third of the civilized world with sugar--and with the all-important, longest-stocked cotton this side of the South Seas, and the very best quality of rice. . . . The property has got to fall to some heir, and why not the United States?

Twain, pp. 212, p. 493.
 Twain, pp. 212, p. 493.
 Twain, pp. 212, p. 493.

Thus both sides of the question have been presented, and reasons pro and con have been given by Mark Twain himself. What conclusions can be drawn? It seems safe to presume that had the United States and other major powers not debased certain aspects of Hawaiian culture, and had they not spread disease, corruption, and other evils among the Islanders, that Twain, the big businessman, would have favored wholeheartedly American annexation of the Sandwich Islands.

Twain's attitudes toward other expansionist and imperialistic moves were less divided. As we have seen in a preceding chapter, he violently opposed American annexation of the Philippines, and American intervention in China. His article, "To The Person Sitting in Darkness," first published in the North American Review, February, 1901, attacked American imperialistic policy. Ferguson has said of this article:

With one exception . . . the article was Mark's finest piece of invective. The abuses satirized in the Yankee had, after all, been far off and foreign; an American could afford to be smug about them. But here they lay on his own doorstep, and were given the blessings of the Christian churches of the country.⁵¹

The article, which created a storm of protest from religious groups and an equally powerful approval from other people, criticized the cruelty of American missionaries in China, related once again the treachery of American policy in the

⁵¹Ferguson, op. cit., p. 284.

Thus both sides of the question have been presented,

and reasons pro and con have been given by Mark Twain him-

self. What conclusions can be drawn? It seems safe to pre-

sume that had the United States and other major powers not in-

terfered with the spread of Hawaiian culture, and had they not

spread disease, corruption, and other evils among the in-

habitants, that Twain, the big businessman, would have returned

wholeheartedly American annexation of the Sandwich Islands.

Twain's attitudes toward other expansionist and

imperialistic moves were less divided. As we have seen in

a preceding chapter, he violently opposed American annexation

of the Philippines, and American intervention in China. His

article, "To the Person-Sifting in Germany," first published

in the North American Review, February, 1891, attacked American

imperialistic policy. Ferguson has said of this article:

With one exception . . . the article was Mark's finest
piece of invective. The abuse centered in the Kaiser
had, after all, been far off and foreign; an American
could afford to be more about them. But here they lay
on his own doorstep, and were given the blessing of the
Christian churches of the country.²¹

The article, which created a storm of protest from religious

groups and an equally powerful approval from other people,

criticized the cruelty of American missionaries in China.

related once again the treachery of American policy in the

Philippines, and damned the world powers who insisted upon overrunning the weaker nations. Twain inquired:

. . . Shall we go on conferring our Civilization upon the peoples that sit in darkness, or shall we give those poor things a rest? Shall we bang right ahead in our old-time, loud, pious way, and commit the new century to the game; or shall we sober up and sit down and think it over first? Would it not be prudent to get our Civilization tools together and see how much stock is left on hand in the way of Glass Beads and Theology, and Maxim Guns and Hymn Books, and Trade Gin and Torches of Progress and Enlightenment (patent adjustable ones, good to fire villages with, upon occasion), and balance the books and arrive at the profit and loss, so that we may intelligently decide whether to continue the business or sell out the property and start a new Civilization Scheme on the proceeds?⁵²

Twain added that the "People Sitting in Darkness" have begun to notice that Christendom is playing for ". . . every stake that appeared on the green cloth," and that they ". . . have become suspicious of the Blessings of Civilization."⁵³ The "People in Darkness" have also begun to examine these "Blessings," and found them only palatable ". . . in a dim light."⁵⁴ Still talking about the "Blessings of Civilization," Twain continued:

⁵²Clemens, "To the Person Sitting in Darkness," The Portable Mark Twain, op. cit., pp. 598-99.

⁵³Ibid., p. 599.

⁵⁴Loc. cit.

Philippines, and damned the world powers who insisted upon

overturning the weaker nations. Twain indicated:

... Shall we go on conquering our civilization upon the peoples that sit in darkness, or shall we give those poor things a rest? Shall we hang tight ahead in our old-time, good, given way, and commit the new century to the game; or shall we sober up and sit down and think it over first? Would it not be prudent to get out civilization tools together and see how much stock is left on hand in the way of Glass Beads and Theories, and Maxim Guns and Hyman Books, and Trade Old and Trenches of Progress and Enlightenment (patent adjustable ones, you know) to fire villages with, upon occasion, and balance the books and arrive at the profit and loss, so that we may intelligently decide whether to continue the business or sell out the property and start a new civilization scheme on the proceeds?

Twain added that the "People Sitting in Darkness" have begun

to notice that Christendom is playing for " . . . every man

that appeared on the great cloth," and that they " . . . have

become suspicious of the Blasphemy of Civilization." The

"People in Darkness" have also begun to examine these "Blas-

phemies," and found them only palatable " . . . in a dim light."

Still talking about the "Blasphemy of Civilization," Twain

continued:

52
Clement, "To the People Sitting in Darkness," The
Portable Mark Twain, pp. 298-99.

21111, p. 299.

21111, p. 299.

Privately and confidentially, it is merely an outside cover, gay and pretty and attractive, displaying the special patterns of our Civilization which we reserve for Home Consumption, while inside the bale is the Actual Thing that the Customer Sitting in Darkness buys with his blood and tears and land and liberty.⁵⁵

In bitter, mocking irony Twain exposed the evils of imperialism and concluded that the United States needed a flag to fly proudly over the newly-acquired domains. He suggested, ". . . we can have just our usual flag, with the white stripes painted black and the stars replaced by the skull and cross-bones."⁵⁶ In few other pieces of writing did Twain show such disgust for the brutal world-wide practice of taking control of defenseless countries.

Twain's trip around the world, which was later described in Following the Equator, gave him many opportunities to see many weak countries dominated by major powers. Twain's ideas, however, were not entirely anti-imperialistic. He wrote to Twichell in 1896, saying, "All over India the English--well, you will never know how good and fine they are till you see them."⁵⁷ Carl Van Doren said, ". . . the antiquity of Asia appalled him,"⁵⁸ and it certainly seemed as if Twain was

⁵⁵Ibid., p. 600.

⁵⁶Ibid., p. 613.

⁵⁷Clemens, Letters, op. cit., II, 633.

⁵⁸Van Doren, The American Novel, 1789-1939, op. cit., p. 155.

privately and confidentially, it is merely an outside cover, gay and pretty and attractive, displaying the special patterns of our civilization which we reserve for Home Consumption, while inside the tale is the actual thing that the Caucasian sitting in darkness must with his blood and tears and land and liberty.

In bitter, mocking irony Twain exposed the evils of imperialism and concluded that the United States needed a flag to fly proudly over the newly-acquired domains. He suggested, "... we can have just our usual flag, with the white stripes painted black and the stars replaced by the skull and crossbones."⁵⁶ In few other pieces of writing did Twain show such disgust for the brutal world-wide practices of taking control of defenseless countries.

"Twain's life around the world, which was later described in Following the Equator, gave him many opportunities to see many weak countries dominated by major powers. Twain's ideas, however, were not entirely anti-imperialistic. He wrote in Twain's 1895, saying, "All over India the English-well, you will never know how good and fine they are till you see them."⁵⁷ Carl Van Doren said, "... the ambiguity of Twain's appeal to him,"⁵⁸ and it certainly seemed as if Twain was

⁵⁶ Twain, p. 600.

⁵⁷ Twain, p. 613.

⁵⁸ Clemens, Letters, pp. 417, 418.

⁵⁹ Van Doren, The American Novel, 1789-1900, pp. 411.

adopting a White Man's Burden attitude in this passage from

Following the Equator:

All the savage lands in the world are going to be brought under subjection to the Christian governments of Europe. I am not sorry, but glad. This coming fate might have been a calamity to those savage people two hundred years ago; but now it will in some cases be a benefaction. The sooner the seizure is consummated, the better for the savages. The dreary and dragging ages of bloodshed and disorder and oppression will give place to peace and order and the reign of law. When one considers what India was under her Hindu and Mohammedan rulers, and what she is now; when he remembers the miseries of her millions then and the protections and humanities which they enjoy now, he must concede that the most fortunate thing that has ever befallen that empire was the establishment of British supremacy there.⁵⁹

Twain had also pleaded in Following the Equator for a great merchant marine which would make it possible for the United States ". . . to assert and maintain her rightful place as one of the Great Maritime Powers of the Planet."⁶⁰

Despite these statements, Twain was, for the most part, opposed to imperialism. Wagenknecht said Twain knew ". . . that the white man's burden is composed principally of loot,"⁶¹ and Ferguson added that Twain's trip around the world ". . . had shown Mark among many other things the seamy side of empire-building: he had had few illusions about white civilization before he started; he had none when he ended."⁶²

⁵⁹Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 300-301.

⁶⁰Ibid., I, 73.

⁶¹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 258.

⁶²Ferguson, op. cit., p. 274.

adopting a White Man's burden attitude in this passage from

Following the Senator:

All the savage lands in the world are going to be brought under subjection to the Christian governments of Europe. I am not sorry, but glad. This coming late might have been a calamity to those savage people two hundred years ago; but now it will in some cases be a benediction. The sooner the savage is civilized, the better for the savage. The greedy and grasping eyes of bloodthirsty disorder and oppression will give place to peace and order and the reign of law. When one considers what India was under her Hindu and Mohammedan rulers, and what she is now; when he remembers the atrocities of her millions then and the protections and humanities which they enjoy now, he must concede that the most fortunate thing that has ever befallen that empire was the establishment of British supremacy there.⁵⁹

Twain had also pleaded in following the Senator for a great

merchant marine which would make it possible for the United States . . . to assert and maintain her rightful place as

one of the Great Maritime Powers of the Planet.⁶⁰

Despite these statements, Twain was, for the most part, opposed to imperialism. Weymanrecht said Twain knew . . . that the white man's burden is composed principally of loot.⁶¹ and Ferguson added that Twain's trip around the world . . . had shown Mark among many other things the empty side of empire-building; he had had few illusions about white civilization before he started; he had none when he ended.⁶²

⁵⁹Stevens, Following the Senator, pp. 211, 11, 20-21.

⁶⁰Ibid., 1, 73.

⁶¹Weymanrecht, pp. 211, p. 258.

⁶²Ferguson, op. cit., p. 174.

Twain himself told the New York Herald a slightly different story in 1900:

I left these shores at Vancouver, a red-hot imperialist. I wanted the American eagle to go screaming into the Pacific.

.....
But I have thought some more, since then, and I have read carefully the treaty of Paris, and I have seen that we do not intend to free but to subjugate the people of the Philippines. We have gone there to conquer, not to redeem.⁶³

On several occasions in Following the Equator Twain attacked imperialism. In one passage he admitted the ignorance of Australian natives, and wondered at their relatively small population. But then he spoke of the white man's arrival, and added, "The white man knows ways of reducing a native population, eighty per cent in twenty years. The native had never seen anything as fine as that before."⁶⁴ A few pages later Twain spoke of cruelty by the whites toward the natives:

In more than one country we have hunted the savage and his little children and their mother with dogs and guns through the woods and swamps for an afternoon's sport, and filled the region with happy laughter over their sprawling and stumbling flight, and their wild supplications for mercy; but this method we do not mind, because custom has inured us to it; yet a quick death by poison is loving-kindness to it.⁶⁵

⁶³William M. Gibson, "Mark Twain and Howells: Anti Imperialists," The New England Quarterly, XX (December, 1947), 445.

⁶⁴Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., I, 185.

⁶⁵Ibid., I, 190.

Twain himself told the New York Herald & Tribune that
ent every in 1900.

I felt that...
But I have known...
read carefully the...
we do not...
the...
to reduce.

On several occasions...
isolation...
American...
population...
and added...
population...
had never been...
pages later...
natives.

In more than one country we have...
his...
through the...
and...
specimens...
because...
by...
by...

...
...
...
...
...

This was the practice that caused Twain to criticize sharply the world-wide imperialism in the latter portion of the nineteenth century. If the natives were being persecuted, he then became their champion, provided that expediency did not cause him to remain silent on the matter. There were times when he was almost fooled by reports that imperialistic countries actually intended to help the ignorant natives. Twain, however, saw through these statements, and realized that money, power, and prestige were the real reasons for the imperialistic moves.⁶⁶ Wagenknecht believed that when Twain vehemently arraigned the missionaries, the denouncement was not caused by any basic disapproval of missionaries

⁶⁶Ibid., I, 248. Twain had said of this subterfuge: "The whites always mean well when they take human fish out of the ocean and try to make them dry and warm and happy and comfortable in a chicken-coop; but the kindest-hearted white man can always be depended on to prove himself inadequate when he deals with savages. He cannot turn the situation around and imagine how he would like it to have a well-meaning savage transfer him from his house and his church and his clothes and his books and his choice food to a hideous wilderness of sand and rocks and snow, and ice and sleet and storm and blistering sun, with no shelter, no bed, no covering for his and his family's naked bodies, and nothing to eat but snakes and grubs and offal. This would be a hell to him; and if he had any wisdom he would know that his own civilization is a hell to the savage--but he hasn't any, and has never had any; and for lack of it he shut up those poor natives in the unimaginable perdition of his civilization, committing his crime with the very best intentions, and saw those poor creatures waste away under his tortures; and gazed at it, vaguely troubled and sorrowful, and wondered what could be the matter with them. One is almost betrayed into respecting those criminals, they were so sincerely kind, and tender, and humane, and well-meaning."

This was the practice that caused Twain to criticize sharply the world-wide imperialism in the latter portion of the nineteenth century. If the natives were being persecuted, he then became their champion, provided that expediency did not cause him to remain silent on the matter. There were times when he was almost fooled by reports that imperialistic countries actually intended to help the ignorant natives. Twain, however, saw through these statements, and realized that money, power, and prestige were the real reasons for the imperialistic moves.⁶⁰ Wagnersucht believed that when Twain vehemently criticized the missionaries, the denunciation was not caused by any basic disapproval of missionaries.

60Twain, I, 248. Twain had said of this subject: "The whites always learn well when they take human flesh out of the ocean and try to make them dry and warm and happy and comfortable in a chicken-coop; but the kindest-hearted white man can always be depended on to prove himself inadequate when he deals with savages. He cannot turn the savage nation around and imagine how he would like it to have a well-meaning savage transfer him from his house and his church and his clothes and his books and his choice food to a hideous wilderness of sand and rocks and snow, and ice and sleet and storm and blistering sun, with no shelter, no bed, no covering for his and his family's naked bodies, and nothing to eat but snakes and grubs and oysters. This would be a hell to him; and if he had any wisdom he would know that his own civilization is a hell to the savage—but he hasn't any, and has never had any; and for lack of it he sent us there poor natives in the unimagined condition of his civilization, committing his crime with the very best intentions; and now those poor creatures waste away under his tortures; and gazed at it, vaguely troubled and sorrowful, and wondered what could be the matter with them. One is almost betrayed into respecting these criminals, they were so sincerely kind and tender, and humane, and well-meaning."

themselves, but because the missionaries were often the agents of imperialism.⁶⁷ Thus Twain usually seems to have been an opponent of expansionist movements outside the United States, and uttered many public comments on the matter. Perhaps his best stricture against imperialism is a tiny passage from Tom Sawyer Abroad, first published in 1894. In talking to Tom about international disputes Huck said: ". . . and I asked Tom if countries always apologized when they had done wrong, and he says: 'Yes, the little ones does.'"⁶⁸

William M. Gibson believed that Twain's anti-imperialist attitude was strengthened by frequent association in 1900 with William Dean Howells. Howells had been writing in protest against the world-wide imperialism, and Gibson felt that from Howells Twain ". . . added to his knowledge of imperialist issues, clarified his thinking, and strengthened his anti-imperialist tendencies."⁶⁹ It is to be noted, however, that Gibson had earlier said, "American writers gave strong support to the anti-imperialist cause."⁷⁰ Twain, therefore, was once again siding with an influential minority, and despite the popular wave of imperialist sentiment sweeping over the

⁶⁸Clemens, Tom Sawyer Abroad, op. cit., p. 110.

⁶⁹Gibson, op. cit., p. 443.

⁷⁰Ibid., p. 435.

themselves, but because the missionaries were often the agents of imperialism.⁶⁷ Thus Twain usually seems to have been an opponent of expansionist movements outside the United States, and uttered many public comments on the matter. Perhaps his best statement against imperialism is a tiny passage from *TOM SAWYER ABROAD*, first published in 1894. In talking to Tom about international disputes Jack said: "... and I asked Tom if countries always apologized when they had done wrong, and he says: 'Yes, the little ones does.'"⁶⁸

William M. Gibson believed that Twain's anti-imperialist attitude was strengthened by frequent association in 1900 with William Dean Howells. Howells had been writing in protest against the world-wide imperialism, and Gibson felt that from Howells' "Twain" ... added to his knowledge of imperialism issues, clarified his thinking, and strengthened his anti-imperialist tendencies.⁶⁹ It is to be noted, however, that Gibson had earlier said, "American writers gave strong support to the anti-imperialist cause."⁷⁰ Twain, therefore, was once again siding with an influential minority, and despite the popular wave of imperialist sentiment sweeping over the

⁶⁸Clemens, *TOM SAWYER ABROAD*, pp. 211, p. 110.

⁶⁹Gibson, pp. 211, p. 143.

⁷⁰*Ibid.*, p. 135.

United States around 1900, he was not out on a limb and acting as sole knight-in-armor for the oppressed little people of the world. Twain's anti-imperialistic stand did not require the highest order of moral courage, and he was not risking his own security. Other writers saw the issues more clearly, and took less inconsistent viewpoints, but Twain's occasional outbursts of angry prose are, nevertheless, notable. An excellent concluding example is his greeting from the nineteenth century to the twentieth, first published in the New York Herald on December 31, 1900:

I bring you the stately matron named Christendom, returning bedraggled, besmirched, and dishonored from pirate-raids in Kiao-Chou, Manchuria, South Africa, and the Philippines, with her soul full of meanness, her pocket full of boodle and her mouth full of pious hypocrisies. Give her soap and a towel, but hide the looking-glass.⁷¹

Thus it has been shown that Twain was not at all times a critic of westward expansion or imperialism, and when he did act as a critic, he was supported by at least a strong minority. His occasional tirades against imperialism are, however, brilliantly phrased and, albeit often inconsistent, came from the heart.

⁷¹Ibid., p. 451. This greeting was later printed on cards distributed by the New England Anti-Imperialist League.

United States around 1900, he was not only one of the
acting as sole knight-in-armor for the oppressed people
ple of the world. Twain's anti-imperialism is shown in his
regards the high of order of world progress, and he was
relating his own knowledge. He wrote and the famous
clearly, and took less to the world's progress, but Twain's
occasional outbursts of angry prose were never less
notable. An excellent example of his writing
from the nineteenth century is the "Powers of the
in the New York Herald in a review of 1900.

LIENCY
SE BOND

ONTARIO

I bring you a letter from a woman named Maria Brown.
relating her life, her husband, and children. She
first-son in 1840, her husband, John Brown, was
and the children, with her and all of her family.
her pocket full of coins and her money bag full of
hypocrites. Give her back her money and her family.
looking glass.

Thus it has been known that Twain was not a
a critic of western expansion in imperialism, and that he
did not act as a critic. He was considered by at least a great
minority. His occasional attacks against imperialism
however, brilliantly exposed and cleared of his responsibility
came from the heart.

Wm. A. 1901. This printing was later printed
on cards distributed by the New England Anti-Imperialist
League.

CHAPTER IV

MONARCHY AND PROGRESS

Two statements which many critics long have taken for granted are that Twain bitterly opposed all types of monarchies, and in his later years developed such a black pessimism that he denied all progress in the world. A brief look at these topics should be of interest in order to determine his actual opinions.

I. MONARCHY

At times Mark Twain did criticize many of the world's monarchical governments, but often his personal associations with royalty served to temper his opinions. He had met, at various times, the King of the Sandwich Islands, the Emperor of Russia, the Kaiser, the Prince of Wales (later King Edward), the Emperor of Austria, the Austrian Princess, and Queen Elizabeth of Rumania. On friendly terms with so many royal families, Twain would have found it as difficult to attack them as it would have been to criticize Howells, Aldrich, Warner, and his other literary friends.

He also delighted in the adulation of the people and loved to be lionized. "The Wild Humorist of the Pacific Slope," "The Belle of New York," and a center of attraction in both Vienna and London, Twain gloried in as much pomp as

Two statements which were made during the trial...
granted and that...
arches, and in the latter part...
which that he denied all...
look at these things...
forming his...
in...
RAC CONTENT

at that time...
monarchical...
rich...
various...
of...
and...
Queen Elizabeth...
royal...
fact...
Warner, and...
He also...
loved to be...
Slopes...
in both...
in both Vienna and London...

at that time...
monarchical...
rich...
various...
of...
and...
Queen Elizabeth...
royal...
fact...
Warner, and...
He also...
loved to be...
Slopes...
in both...
in both Vienna and London...

any nineteenth-century ruler. Even his dress was conspicuous. The nattiest of river pilots, he eventually became the roughest of roughs in Washoe. His startling white clothing, donned at the age of seventy, eventually seemed almost drab in comparison with his gaudy Oxford robe.

At one time he said he had more power than any king, and he gloried in the feeling. When a Mississippi pilot, he wrote to Will Bowen:

You know, yourself, Bill--or you ought to know it--that all men--kings & serfs alike--are slaves to other men & to circumstances--save, alone, the pilot--who comes at no man's beck or call, obeys no man's orders & scorns all men's suggestions.¹

Later he showed his delight in pomp and prestige in a sketch about international diplomacy. Highly chagrined and embarrassed because American diplomats looked nondescript in comparison with foreign ambassadors, Twain urged that American diplomats be given huge salary increases and the gaudiest uniforms ever seen on earth.² This is the Mark Twain said by some critics to have opposed all shams!

Two other points illustrate Twain's penchant for

¹Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters to Will Bowen, Theodore Hornberger, editor (Austin: University of Texas Press, 1941), pp. 13-14.

²Samuel L. Clemens, "Diplomatic Pay and Clothes," The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917), pp. 226-240.

power and royalty. In A Connecticut Yankee the "Boss" opposed the backward monarchical form of government in medieval England. He forthwith proposed to establish an Arthurian democracy, but actually developed a dictatorship, with himself as dictator.³ In addition to a natural desire to rule, Twain sympathized with royalty. He realized they had to sit high on their thrones, and could not mix with the people. In his semi-allegorical sketch, "The Bee," Twain told how everyone renders lip service to the Queen Bee, but how actually she is a victim of extreme loneliness.⁴ Tom Canty echoes this same feeling in The Prince and the Pauper when he says, "In what way have I offended, that the good God should take me away from the fields and the free air and the sunshine, to shut me up here and make me a king and afflict me so?"⁵

Despite the caustic strictures against English monarchy attributed to Twain when he was in the throes of writing A Connecticut Yankee, his public utterances indicated that of all monarchies he favored the English most. His sketch,

³Ferguson, op. cit., p. 245.

⁴Samuel L. Clemens, "The Bee," What Is Man? And Other Essays (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917), p. 282.

⁵Samuel L. Clemens, The Prince and the Pauper (New York: P. F. Collier and Son), pp. 104-5.

power and money. In a country where the money
posed the backward movement of the country in general
England. In fact, the country is a country of
democracy, but actually democracy is a country of
self as dictator. In addition to a country of
Twain sympathized with the country. He realized that the
high on their shoulders, and could not see the country
In his anti-slavery country, Twain said that
everyone knows the country is the country, but not
Twain was a country of country. Twain was
echoes this same feeling in the country and the country
he says, "In that way have I observed, but not as a
should take as much from the country and the country
the country, for that we have made as a country and
list as a country.

Twain was a country of country. Twain was
archy attributed to Twain was a country of country
A Congressional Twain, his country of country
of all money was a country of country.

Twain was a country of country. Twain was
Twain was a country of country. Twain was
Twain was a country of country. Twain was
Twain was a country of country. Twain was

"The Great Revolution on Pitcairn," satirizes monarchies, dictators, and shams of various sorts, but concludes that the English form of monarchy was preferable to any other kind.⁶ Twain also had said that the British flag flying over a spot meant ". . . efficient government and good order," and that England's monarchy was superior to all others.⁷ A final compliment to English monarchy was delivered by Twain in 1908 as an address to the British Schools and Universities Club in New York at a meeting honoring Queen Victoria's birthday:

As a woman the Queen was all that the most exacting standards could require. As a far-reaching and effective beneficent moral force she had no peer in her time among either monarchs or commoners. As a monarch she was without reproach in her great office. We may not venture, perhaps, to say so sweeping a thing as this in cold blood about any monarch that preceded her upon either her own throne or upon any other. It is a colossal eulogy, but it is justified.⁸

One of the reasons why Mark Twain did not attack monarchies as strongly as he might have was his growing pessimism. In his later years he became increasingly disillusioned with the human race, and thought it futile to force democracy on people who did not care or who did not merit

⁶Clemens, "The Great Revolution in Pitcairn," Tom Sawyer Abroad, op. cit., pp. 343-359.

⁷Clemens, "Some Rambling Notes of An Idle Excursion," Ibid., p. 286.

⁸Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, Albert Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1923), pp. 387-88.

"The Great Revolution in Literature," said the monarchist, dictators, and shams of various sorts, but concluded that the English form of monarchy was preferable to any other kind. ⁶ Twain also had said that the British flag flying over a spot meant "... efficient government and good order," and that England's monarchy was superior to all others. A final compliment to English monarchy was delivered by Twain in 1908 as an address to the British schools and universities given in New York at a meeting honoring Queen Victoria's birthday.

As a woman, Twain was all that the most exacting standards could require. As a far-seeing and vigorous benefactor, moral force she had no peer in her time among either monarchs or commoners. It is a monarch she was without passion in her great office. No way out venture, perhaps, to say she was a monarch as this in gold blood about any monarch that preceded her, and that her own throne was more of a throne. It is a colossal eulogy, but it is justified.

One of the reasons why Mark Twain did not accept monarchies as strongly as he might have was his growing pessimism. While later years he became increasingly disillusioned with the human race, and thought it futile to force democracy on people who did not care or who did not merit

⁶Clemens, "The Great Revolution in Literature," 1908
Bayer Address, p. 343-352.
⁷Clemens, "Some Humbling Notes of An Idle Excursion,"
Ibid., p. 283.
⁸General L. Clemens, Mark Twain's Ancestress, Albert
Bigelow Paine, editor (New York and London: Harper and
Brothers, 1923), pp. 387-88.

consideration. In The American Claimant Twain sent an English earl's son incognito into the American working-classes and confronted the young nobleman with boundless examples of sham, inequality, and un-democratic feeling.⁹ If the common people in a democracy were constantly going to adopt feudal ranks, what could Twain gain by ranting and raving against monarchy? There were times when he actually believed the United States was already a monarchy, despite the republican form of government.¹⁰ Years later at Stormfield he admitted that monarchy had not yet come to the United States,¹¹ but

⁹Samuel L. Clemens, The American Claimant, and Other Stories and Sketches (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1899), p. 105.

¹⁰Paine, op. cit., I, 530.

¹¹Ibid., III, 1467. Twain said of monarchy in the United States: "I'm not expecting it in my time nor in my children's time, though it may be sooner than we think. There are two special reasons for it and one condition. The first reason is, that it is in the nature of man to want a definite something to love, honor, reverently look up to and obey; a God and a King, for example. The second reason is, that while little republics have lasted long, protected by their poverty and insignificance, great ones have not. And the condition is, vast power and wealth, which breed commercial and political corruptions, and incite public favorites to dangerous ambitions." In connection with the forms of government, it is extremely interesting today to look at Twain's comment on Communism. He once said, "Communism is idiocy. They want to divide up the property. Suppose they did it. It requires brains to keep money as well as to make it. In a precious little while the money would be back in the former owner's hands and the communists would be poor again. The division would have to be remade every three years or it would do the communists no good." Ibid., II, 644.

consideration. In The American Gladiators Twain sent an English earl's son into the American working-classes and confronted the young nobleman with boundless examples of shame, inequality, and un-democratic feeling.⁹ If the common people in a democracy were constantly going to adopt feudal ranks, what could Twain gain by ranting and raving against monarchy? There were times when he actually believed the United States was already a monarchy, despite the republican form of government.¹⁰ Years later at Elmira he admitted that monarchy had not yet come to the United States,¹¹ but

⁹Samuel L. Clemens, The American Gladiators, and Other Stories and Sketches (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1899), p. 105.

¹⁰Twain, op. cit., I, 530.

¹¹Ibid., II, 145. Twain said of monarchy in the United States: "I'm not expecting it in my time nor in my children's time, though it may be sooner than we think. There are two special reasons for it and one condition. The first reason is, that it is in the nature of man to want a definite something to love, honor, reverence, look up to, and obey; a God and a King, for example. The second reason is, that while little republics have lasted long, protected by their poverty and insignificance, great ones have not. And the condition is, vast power and wealth, which breed commercial and political corruptions, and make public favorites to dangerous ambitions." In connection with the forms of government, it is extremely interesting today to look at Twain's comment on Communism. He once said, "Gosh, munism is idiosyncrasy. They want to divide up the property. Suppose they did it. It requires brains to keep money as well as to make it. In a precious little while the money would be back in the former owner's hands and the communists would be poor again. The division would have to be repeated every three years or it would be the communists no good." Ibid., II, 644.

would eventually replace the present democracy. If Twain had not been so disgusted with the human race, he might have championed democracy to a considerably greater extent than he ever actually did.

It now becomes apparent that Twain was not so great a critic of monarchy as many people have believed. A brief look at his anti-monarchical strictures will support this statement. It might seem difficult to prove when one considers that Twain once said, "The institution of Royalty in any form is an insult to the human race,"¹² and added, "We Americans worship the almighty dollar! Well, it is a worthier god than the Heredity Privilege."¹³ Twain in stating that monarchy was out of date, said: "It belongs to the state of culture that admires a ring in your nose, a head full of feathers and your belly painted blue."¹⁴ At this time he also said:

The kingly office is entitled to no respect. It was originally procured by the highwayman's methods; it remains a perpetuated crime, can never be anything but the symbol of a crime. . . . A monarch when good is entitled to the consideration which we accord to a pirate who keeps Sunday School between crimes; when bad he is entitled to none at all. But if you cross a king with a prostitute the resulting mongrel perfectly satisfies

¹²Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 202.

¹³Ibid., p. 209.

¹⁴Ibid., p. 210.

would eventually replace the present democracy. It is
had not been so diagnosed with the human race, no might
have championed democracy to a considerably greater extent
than he ever actually did.

It now becomes apparent that Twain was not so great
a critic of monarchy as many people have believed. A brief
look at his anti-monarchical strictures will support this
statement. It might seem difficult to prove when one con-
sider that Twain once said, "The institution of royalty is
any form is an insult to the human race." But when we
Americans worship the almighty dollar, well, it is a
worship not less than the Heredity Privilege. Twain is
stating that monarchy was out of date, said: "It belongs to
the state of culture that admits a king in your nose, a
head full of feathers and your belly painted blue." At
this time he also said:

The kindly office is entitled to no respect. It was
originally procured by the highwayman's method. It re-
mains a perpetuated crime, can never be anything but
the symbol of a crime. . . . A monarch when good is
entitled to the consideration which we accord to a pirate
who keeps Sunday School between crimes; when bad he is
entitled to none at all. But if you cross a king with a
prostitute the resulting monster is perfectly satisfied.

12090000, Mark Twain's Notebook, pp. 210, 211, 212.
131010, p. 209.
141010, p. 210.

the English idea of nobility. The ducal houses of Great Britain of today are mainly derived from this gaudy combination.¹⁵

These scathing statements undoubtedly represented Twain's sincere feelings at the time (1888), but it should be noted that they were written in his notebook, and were not for publication. In a private memorandum he wrote, "There was never a throne which did not represent a crime,"¹⁶ but when he wrote for other people's eyes he subdued his hatred of monarchy by commenting on less important things such as the dethronement of the Emperor of Brazil.¹⁷ Of course, not all Twain's criticism of monarchy were repressed. The Prince and the Pauper has a strong lesson that kings should be morally obligated to their people, and A Connecticut Yankee arraigns traditional and narrow-minded monarchy. Twain also attacked monarchs in his sketch, "The Shrine of St. Wagner," when he stated:

The valuable princes, the desirable princes, are the czars and their sort. By their mere dumb presence in the world they cover with derision every argument that can be invented in favor of royalty by the most ingenious casuist.¹⁸

Twain, then, did hate monarchical forms of government,

¹⁵Ibid., p. 196.

¹⁶Paine, op. cit., II, 874.

¹⁷Ibid., II, 890.

¹⁸Clemens, "The Shrine of St. Wagner," What is Man? And Other Essays, op. cit., p. 218.

the English idea of nobility. The dualism of Great Britain of today are mainly derived from this early constitution.¹⁵

These acerbic statements undoubtedly represented Taine's sincere feelings at the time (1858), but it should be noted that they were written in his notebook, and were not for publication. In a private memorandum he wrote, "There was never a throne which did not represent a crime,"¹⁶ but when

he wrote for other people's eyes he subdued his hatred of monarchy by commenting on less important things such as the dethronement of the Emperor of Brazil.¹⁷ Of course, not all

Taine's criticisms of monarchy were repressed. The Princes and the People has a strong lesson that kings should be morally obligated to their people, and a Connecticut Yankee satirizes traditional and narrow-minded monarchy. Taine also attacked monarchs in his sketch, "The Shrine of St. Wagner," when he

stated:

The valuable princes, the desirable princes, are the cogs and their teeth. By their mere dumb presence in the world they cover with detraction every argument that can be invented in favor of royalty by the most intelligent casualist.¹⁸

Taine, then, did hate monarchical forms of government.

¹⁵Ibid., p. 106.

¹⁶Pathe, op. cit., II, 374.

¹⁷Ibid., II, 390.

¹⁸Clemens, "The Shrine of St. Wagner," What is Man? And Other Essays, op. cit., p. 218.

although there were occasions when close association with royalty influenced his opinion. His actual criticisms made public, however, are not so numerous as one might believe. Once again he practiced restraint, and did not oppose the time-honored institution if there was any possibility that such opposition might make him personally uncomfortable. In private he raged vehemently against the English monarchy, but England was a source of considerable income for Twain, and in public he voiced the opinion that English monarchy was worthy and good. In this instance, as in so many others, Twain's social criticism was tempered by practical and personal expediency.

II. PROGRESS

Mark Twain was again inconsistent in his attitudes toward progress. If he was a complete pessimist, then we would not expect him to place much faith in progress. This attitude is borne out by several of Twain's statements. In "Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven" Twain showed that many of the heavenly counterparts of erstwhile human beings were still boobs.¹⁹ In a speech to the American Society in London, 1907, he lamented the so-called progress in America which has succeeded only in killing and crippling more people

¹⁹Samuel L. Clemens, "Extract From Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven," Harpers' Monthly Magazine, CXVI (December, 1907 and January, 1908), 276.

although there were occasions when his opinions were
 royally influenced his opinion. His socialistic views
 public, however, are not as much as the public believe.
 Once again he practices restraint, and his not expressing
 time-honored institution of there was any possibility that
 such opposition might arise his personality, undoubtedly.
 In private he raged vehemently against the British monarchy,
 but England was a source of considerable income for him,
 and in public he voiced the opinion that English monarchy
 was worthy and good. In this instance, as in many others,
 Twain's social criticism was tempered by practical and political
 expediency.

II. PROGRESS

Mark Twain was again disappointed in his attitude
 toward progress. If he was a socialist, he was not
 would not expect him to place much faith in progress. This
 attitude is borne out by several of Twain's statements. In
 "Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven" Twain showed that
 many of the heavenly counterparts of earthlings have failed
 were still hoops.¹⁹ In a speech to the American Society in
 London, 1907, he lamented the so-called progress in America
 which has succeeded only in killing and crippling more people.

¹⁹Samuel L. Clemens, "Mark Twain's Speeches," in *Mark Twain: A Collection of Speeches*, pp. 1-10. *Visit to Heaven*, *Harvard Book of American Literature*, 1907 and January, 1908, 1909.

every year on the Fourth of July.²⁰ Years earlier, in a letter to Will Bowen, Twain had spoken despondently of the passage of time:

As to the past, there is but one good thing about it, & that is, that it is the past--we don't have to see it again. There is nothing in it worth pickling for present or future use. Each day that is added to the past is but an old boot added to a pile of rubbish. . . .²¹

This letter, written when Twain was in his prime, was meant to discourage Bowen who insisted on trying to re-live the "good old days," but it still does not intimate that the present time is more worth while than the past. Twain's most outstanding invective against the myth of progress was prepared as a speech for an 1872 Fourth of July gathering of Americans in London. Like many of his sincere and biting social criticisms, however, it never was delivered:

This is an age of progress, and ours is a progressive land. A great and glorious land, too--a land which has developed a Washington, a Franklin, a William M. Tweed, a Longfellow, a Motley, a Jay Gould, a Samuel C. Pomeroy, a recent Congress which has never had its equal (in some respects), and a United States Army which conquered sixty Indians in eight months by tiring them out--which is much better than uncivilized slaughter, God knows. We have a criminal jury system which is superior to any in the world; and its efficiency is only marred by the difficulty of finding twelve men every day who don't know

²⁰Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., pp. 346-47.

²¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters to Will Bowen, op. cit., p. 23.

every year on the fourth of July. This is a very important
letter to Bill Brown, I think, and I am sure it will be
passed on time.

As to the case, there is no need to say that it is
a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
again. There is no need to say that it is a case, that it is a case,
out of the case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
is but an old case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case.

This letter, written with the same old case, is a case, that it is a case,
to discourage Brown who has been in the case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
"good old days," but it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case.

present time in the case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
most outstandingly, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
prepared as a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
of American in London, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
social criticism, however, it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case.

This is an old case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
land. A case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
developed a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
a recent Congress, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
respect, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
sixty years, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
is much better, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
We have a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
in the world, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case,
difficulty of finding a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case, that it is a case.

20. Clarence, Earl Brown's letter to Bill Brown
21. Clarence, Earl Brown's letter to Bill Brown
22. Clarence, Earl Brown's letter to Bill Brown

anything and can't read. And I may observe that we have an insanity plea that would have saved Cain. I think I can say, and say with pride, that we have some legislatures that bring higher prices than any in the world.

I refer with effusion to our railway system, which consents to let us live, though it might do the opposite, being our owners. It only destroyed three thousand and seventy lives last year by collisions, and twenty-seven thousand two hundred and sixty by running over heedless and unnecessary people at crossings.²²

Although from the above evidence it does not appear that Twain believed in progress, he made many statements which contradict this belief.. In Innocents Abroad Twain expounded the doctrine of progress. Old European culture could not compare with the booming American way of life. In one lengthy passage Twain gave the imaginary monologue of a backward Italian, relating the mechanical wonders of America to his unbelieving friends.²³ Elsewhere he compared Napoleon III with Abdul Aziz, the Ottoman Emperor, and despite his usually scornful attitude toward Europe, said here that a comparison between Napoleon and Abdul was like that between the nineteenth and first centuries.²⁴ Twain had contempt for the Arabs because, "The plows these people use are simply a sharpened stick such as Abraham plowed with, and

²²Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., p. 35.

²³Samuel L. Clemens, Innocents Abroad (Hartford: American Publishing Company, 1872), pp. 267-71.

²⁴Ibid., pp. 126-27.

anything and can't read. And I may observe that we have an instantly piece that would have saved Cain. I think I can say, and say with pride, that we have some things later that bring higher prices than any in the world.

I refer with allusion to our railway system, which consents to let us live, though it might be the opposite being our owners. It only has to be shown that and seventy lives last year by collisions, and twenty-seven thousand two hundred and sixty by running over headless and unnecessary people at crossings.²²

Although from the above evidence it does not appear

that Twain believed in progress, he made many statements which contradicted this belief. In Innocents Abroad Twain expanded the doctrine of progress. Old European culture could not compare with the booming American way of life. In one lengthy passage Twain gave the imaginary monologue of a backward Italian, venting the mechanical wonders of America to his unbelieving friends.²³ Elsewhere he compared Napoleon III with Abdul Aziz, the Ottoman sultan, and despite his usually scornful attitude toward Europe, said here that a comparison between Napoleon and Abdul was like that between the nineteenth and first centuries.²⁴ Twain had contempt for the Arabs because, "The place these people use as simply a sharpened stick such as Arabs place with, and

²²Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, pp. 211, p. 35.

²³Samuel L. Clemens, Innocents Abroad (New York: American Publishing Company, 1895), pp. 269-71.

²⁴Ibid., pp. 126-27.

they still winnow their wheat as he did. . . . They never invent anything, never learn anything."²⁵ Two things in the Near East pleased Twain. One was his caravan's sumptuous dining tent and equipment which enabled the travelers to feast luxuriously with the aid of modern conveniences. The second was his first sight of Odessa, Russia, with its hustle, bustle, and businesslike appearance:

I have not felt so much at home for a long time as I did when I "raised the hill" and stood in Odessa for the first time. It looked just like an American city; fine, broad streets, and straight as well . . . a stirring, business-look about the streets and stores; fast walkers; a familiar new look about the houses and everything; yea, and a driving and smothering cloud of dust that was so like a message from our own dear native land. . . .²⁶

The Connecticut Yankee and Following the Equator were, in several respects, doctrines of progress. The Connecticut Yankee actually was more an indictment of narrow Catholicism than of English monarchy, but it also preached the gospel of nineteenth century American progress. There is, of course, some satire on American customs, but for the most part it propagates a philosophy of business, industry, and modern improvements. After a season or two at Camelot, the "Boss" declared:

I was pretty well satisfied with what I had already

²⁵Ibid., pp. 445-46.

²⁶Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., p. 35.

accomplished. In various quiet nooks and corners, I had the beginnings of all sorts of industries under way--nuclei of future vast factories, the iron and steel missionaries of my future civilization.²⁷

Following the Equator, despite its much more disillusioned air than the early travel book, Innocents Abroad, also contained some belief in progress. Twain saw a beautiful and graceful mosque in India, with two slender white minarets rising, fairy-like, to the sky. To make it utterly beautiful in his eyes, it needed only one thing: modern electric lights atop the two towers.²⁸ Twain also wrote about Adelaide, Australia, in much the same vein as he had described booming towns along the upper river in Life on the Mississippi:

Adelaide was indeed almost empty; its population had fallen to three thousand. During two years or more the death-trance continued. Prospect of revival there was none; hope of it had ceased. Then, as suddenly as the paralysis had come, came the resurrection from it. Those astonishingly rich copper-mines were discovered, and the corpse got up and danced.

The wool production began to grow; grain-raising followed--followed so vigorously, too, that four or five years after the copper discovery, this little colony, which had had to import its breadstuffs, formerly, and pay hard prices for them--once fifty dollars a barrel for flour--had become an exporter of grain. The prosperities continued.²⁹

²⁷Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 693.

²⁸Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 181.

²⁹Ibid., I, 162.

accomplished. In various cases the bodies had the appearance of having been under water for some time. The bodies were found in various places, some in the water and some on the shore.

Following the Whaler, several other ships were dispatched

also than the early travel back to the whaler, which was believed to have been a whaler and was successful in finding the bodies. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore.

in his eyes, it seemed that the bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore.

Adelaide was located about 100 miles from the whaler. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore.

The body protection began to be taken. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore. The bodies were found in the water, some in the water and some on the shore.

27. Following the whaler, several other ships were dispatched
Court, pp. 111, 112.

28. Following the whaler, several other ships were dispatched
29. Following the whaler, several other ships were dispatched

Twain showed his belief in progress on several other occasions. He stated that ". . . the valuable part . . . of what we call civilization had no existence. . . ." before the days of Queen Victoria,³⁰ and he uttered a somewhat similar opinion in a speech delivered in 1889:

How old is real civilization? The answer is easy and unassailable. A century ago it had not appeared anywhere in the world during a single instant since the world was made. If you grant these terms . . . there is today but one real civilization in the world, and it is not yet thirty years old. We made the trip and hoisted its flag when we disposed of our slavery.³¹

This passage is of extreme interest because it is Twain's only statement of the belief in progress in which the advances of civilization are not thoroughly materialistic. What conclusions, then can be drawn about Mark Twain and progress? First, he believed wholeheartedly in materialistic progress, especially in the United States. On this point Van Wyck Brooks says, ". . . Mark Twain found himself the spokesman of the Philistine majority, the headlong enthusiast for what he called 'the plainest and sturdiest and infinitely greatest and worthiest of all the centuries the world has seen.'"³² Second, Twain's belief in progress was

³⁰Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 208.

³¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., pp. 150-151.

³²Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., pp. 137-38.

shaken when he considered the human element in the world. Machines improved, but man did not, and Twain ultimately decided that man never would improve. Thus progress, in Twain's eyes, was measured only in terms of technological advancement. He took a Sellers-like delight in material improvements, and lived in accord with a statement which he, as a river pilot, once made to Orion: ". . . if I were a heathen, I would rear a statue to Energy, and fall down and worship it!"³³

³³Paine, op. cit., I, 146.

shaken when he considered the new element in the
Machine improved, for now the full and final
decided that the new element improved. This
twain's eyes, the new element was in fact a
advancement. He took a full view of the
improvement, and lived in a world with a
as a river pilot, once with the
heaven, I would need a machine to help me
worship the

Efficiency

EFFICIENCY
ERASE BOX
CONTENT

CHAPTER V

BIG BUSINESS, MONOPOLY, AND SPECULATION

During and after the post-Civil War period, which Twain so aptly labeled the Gilded Age, the entire economic structure of the United States underwent marked changes. Once predominantly rural, the country rapidly became industrialized, and small individuals aligned themselves against the huge capitalists. The financiers gained fabulous wealth and power, and were responsible for much of the graft and corruption that swept the nation after the Civil War:

It was these buccaneers who were responsible for the gold corner in 1867, the Credit Mobilier scandal, the various financial panics, the stockwatering of the railroads and industrial corporations, the organization of trusts and holding companies, and the vast and unscrupulous stock manipulations. . . .¹

The big financial barons were not the only Americans interested in business, for the spirit of speculation had swept through the country, and even some of the "little people" risked life savings in the hope of becoming rich. A great part of the nation was affected:

The spirit of the frontier was to flare up in a huge buccaneering orgy. Having swept across the continent to the Pacific coast like a visitation of locusts, the frontier spirit turned back upon its course to conquer

¹Charles A. Madison, Critics and Crusaders, A Century of American Protest (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1947), p. 245.

the East, infecting the new industrialism with a crude individualism, fouling the halls of Congress, despoiling the public domain, and indulging in a huge national barbecue.²

The Gilded Age ". . . threw itself into the business of money-getting," and "allowed itself to get drunk" with greed.³

The people were coarsely materialistic and wanted only the most abundant comforts out of life. Parrington said of the age, "Freedom and opportunity, to acquire, to possess, to enjoy--for that it would sell its soul."⁴ Parrington also pointed out that since ". . . money was to be made out of unearned increment . . . the creation of booms was a profitable industry. The times were stirring and it was a shiftless fellow who did not make his pile."⁵ The philosophy of "big business" became so popular that it was taught in schools, publicized by respectable writers, and adopted by the educated classes.⁶ Now called "robber barons," the great financiers were then known as "captains of industry."⁷

²Parrington, op. cit., III, 4.

³Ibid., III, 17.

⁴Ibid., III, 11.

⁵Ibid., III, 9.

⁶Parkes, op. cit., p. 231.

⁷Ibid., p. 237.

the East, infecting the new industrialism with a crude individualism, forcing the halls of Congress, despoiling the public domain, and indulging in a huge national barter.²

The Gilded Age " . . . threw itself into the business of money-

getting," and "allowed itself to get drunk" with greed.³

The people were coarsely materialistic and wanted only the most abundant comforts out of life. Partridge said of this

age, "Freedom and opportunity, to acquire, to possess, to

enjoy--for that it would sell its soul."⁴ Partridge also

pointed out that since " . . . money was to be made out of

unearned increment . . . the creation of boom was a profit-

able industry. The times were stirring and it was a shift-

less fellow who did not make his pile."⁵ The philosophy of

"big business" became so popular that it was taught in

schools, publicized by respectable writers, and adopted by

the educated classes.⁶ Now called "robber barons," the great

financiers were then known as "captains of industry."⁷

²Partridge, op. cit., III, 4.

³Ibid., III, 17.

⁴Ibid., III, 11.

⁵Ibid., III, 9.

⁶Parkees, op. cit., p. 281.

⁷Ibid., p. 237.

Fred Lewis Pattee, feeling that this age needed an intelligent moral dictator to bring the frenzied people back to normal, commented:

But no dictator arose, only a satirist. Mark Twain did lay about him lustily. Satire he wrote in the hotness of wrath, satire touching every sore spot in the national life. A Don Quixote figure, he rode furiously in every direction tilting at the windmills of religious fanaticism, political chicanery, social inanity, judicial injustice, sentimental romance!⁸

The purpose of this chapter will be to study Mark Twain's criticisms of big business, monopolies, and the craze of speculation in the United States.

I. TWAIN'S ATTITUDE TOWARD SPECULATION AND FINANCIAL ABUSES

"There are two times in a man's life when he should not speculate: when he can't afford it, and when he can."⁹ This was by no means Twain's only comment on big business, monopoly, and speculation, although it is one of his best known statements on the topic. Twain recognized some of the evils in the financial system as early as his Washoe years. His "Empire City Massacre," an exaggerated fictional burlesque of several hideous murders, was actually inspired by his annoyance at the process of "cooking" dividends by large

⁸Samuel L. Clemens, Representative Selections, op. cit., pp. xli-xlii.

⁹Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 215.

Frank Lewis Patton, feeling that this age needed an intelligent moral dictator to bring the frenzied people back to normal, commented:

But no dictator arose, only a satirist. Mark Twain did lay about him lustily. Bitter he wrote in the hotness of wrath, satire touching every sore spot in the national life. A Don Quixote figure, he rode furiously in every direction tilting at the windmills of religion, fanaticism, political dishonesty, social inequality, judicial injustice, sentimental romanticism.

The purpose of this chapter will be to study Mark Twain's criticisms of big business, monopolies, and the craze of speculation in the United States.

1. TWAIN'S ATTITUDE TOWARD SPECULATION AND FINANCIAL ABUSES

"There are two times in a man's life when he should not speculate: when he can't afford it, and when he can." This was by no means Twain's only comment on big business, monopoly, and speculation, although it is one of his best known statements on the topic. Twain recognized some of the evils in the financial system as early as his Kansas years. His "Harpur City Passports," an exaggerated fictional newspaper of several hideous murders, was actually inspired by his annoyance at the process of "cooking" dividends by large

⁸Samuel L. Clemens, Representative Selections, pp. 215, pp. xli-xlii.

⁹Clemens, Following the Leader, pp. 215, 216.

California corporations, at the expense of the stockholders. In this period Twain also discerned the foolishness of speculation, for in December, 1866, he wrote about Virginia City in the San Francisco Bulletin:

Virginia bore quite a business-like aspect, and it was said that she was enjoying a very fair degree of prosperity. Business there now is on a good, firm, healthy basis, and she is steadily recovering from the collapse brought upon her by reckless speculation.¹⁰

Tom Sawyer has usually been considered an idyllic juvenile adventure story, but at least one critic, Edward Wagenknecht, claims to see more than mere narrative in it:

There is some penetrating social criticism in the last chapter of Tom Sawyer, where Huck finds his money and his new position in life an appalling burden and only wishes he could throw it all off and go back to the days of comfortable poverty when he had nothing to do except to be himself.¹¹

There are many other passages scattered through Twain's writings which criticize the evils in the financial system. In the "Esquimaux Maiden's Romance" Twain shows the debasing effect of sudden riches upon the plodding, hard-working Eskimo.¹² A short sketch unpublished until recently, Twain's "Letter from the Recording Angel," implied that most great

¹⁰Benson, op. cit., p. 206.

¹¹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 112.

¹²Clemens, "The Esquimaux Maiden's Romance," The Man Who Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories, op. cit., p. 149.

California corporations, at the expense of the stockholders. In this period Tain also discussed the localism of spec-
ulation, for in December, 1880, he wrote about Virginia City
in the San Francisco Bulletin:

Virginia bore quite a business-like aspect, and it was
said that she was enjoying a very fair degree of pros-
perity. Business there now is on a good, firm, healthy
basis, and she is steadily recovering from the collapse
brought upon her by reckless speculation.¹⁰

Tom Sawyer has usually been considered an idyllic
juvenile adventure story, but at least one critic, Wagners-
schmidt, claims to see more than mere narrative in it.
There is some penetrating social criticism in the last
chapter of Tom Sawyer, where Huck finds his money and
his new position in life an oppressive burden and only
wishes he could throw it all off and go back to the days
of comfortable poverty when he had nothing to be aware
of himself.¹¹

There are many other passages scattered through Tain's
writings which criticize the evils in the financial system.
In the "Eugene Welden's Romance" Tain shows the debasing
effect of sudden riches upon the plodding, hard-working Es-
kimo.¹² A short sketch unpublished until recently, Tain's
"Letter from the Recording Angel," implied that most great

¹⁰ Benson, op. cit., p. 206.

¹¹ Wagners-
schmidt, op. cit., p. 112.

¹² Others, "The Eugene Welden's Romance," The San
Francisco Bulletin, and other essays and stories, op.
cit., p. 173.

fortunes amassed in business are acquired and maintained by avaricious selfishness.¹³ Twain had said almost the same thing in his "A Humane Word from Satan," where he advised charities not to be squeamish about accepting "tainted" money, because all large donations are usually "conscience money." In this piece Satan said, ". . . There isn't a rich man in your vast city who doesn't perjure himself every year before the tax board."¹⁴ Twain also criticized his father for bequeathing the huge tract of Tennessee land to the Clemens family. The family was always tempted to speculate, and the land caused many anxious moments in the family.¹⁵ In a relatively mild reproof Twain had also spoken of Joseph Twichell's church in Hartford as the "Church of the Holy Speculators," because of the wealthy Republican tycoons who left their financial affairs long enough on Sunday to attend services.¹⁶ Thomas Alva Edison reported a comment by Twain against the practices of big business. Twain and George Iles had been visiting Edison; when they prepared to leave, it was raining. Iles suggested "appropriating" an empty

¹³Samuel L. Clemens, "Letter from the Recording Angel," Harper's Magazine, CXCI (February, 1946), 106-9.

¹⁴Samuel L. Clemens, "A Humane Word From Satan," The \$30,000 Bequest, and Other Stories (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917), pp. 299-300.

¹⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 3.

¹⁶Paine, op. cit., I, 370.

fortunes amassed in business are acquired and maintained in
 various California. ¹³ Twin had said about the same
 thing in his "A Humane Word from Retain," where he advised
 charities not to be parsimonious about accepting "retained"
 money, because all large donations are usually "retained"
 money. "In this place Retain said, '... There isn't a rich
 man in your vest city who doesn't portend himself every year
 before the tax board.' ¹⁴ Twin also criticized his father
 for requesting the huge tract of Tennessee land to the
 Clemens family. The family was always tempted to speculate
 and the land caused many anxious moments in the family. ¹⁵
 In a relatively wild report Twin had also spoken of Joseph
 Twichell's church in Hartford as the "church of the Holy
 Speculators," because of the wealthy Republican tycoons who
 left their financial affairs long enough on Sunday to attend
 services. ¹⁶ Thomas Alva Edison reported a comment by Twin
 against the practices of big business. Twin and George
 lies had been visiting Edison when they prepared to leave,
 it was raining. Lies suggested "appropriation" as a reply

¹³Samuel L. Clemens, "Letter from the Recording Angel,"
Harper's Magazine, CCXII (February, 1906), 106-9.

¹⁴Samuel L. Clemens, "A Humane Word from Retain," The
 130,000 Greatest and Other Stories (New York: F. V. Collier
 and Son Company, 1917), pp. 299-300.

¹⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, pp. 211, 1, 3.

¹⁶Retain, op. cit., I, 370.

coach standing outside the door, and Twain immediately replied, "Business man's idea! business man's idea!"¹⁷

Twain, in his Connecticut Yankee, once more pointed out the dangers of speculation:

Knight-errantry is a most chuckle-headed trade, and it is tedious hard work, too, but I begin to see that there is money in it, after all, if you have luck. Not that I would ever engage in it as a business; for I wouldn't. No sound and legitimate business can be established on a basis of speculation.¹⁸

Usually considered Twain's greatest indictment of speculation is The Gilded Age. The inimitable Colonel Sellers, along with his cohorts and the Washington politicians, is a satire on corrupt and impractical financial schemes.¹⁹ Lucy Lockwood Hazard has said the book was written, not in admiration of the ingeniousness and zeal ". . . displayed by these shrewd manipulators of public funds, but in passionate disgust at the fraud and chicanery by which the successful

¹⁷Thomas Alva Edison, "Excerpt from a Letter by Thomas Alva Edison to Cyril Clemens," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 102.

¹⁸Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 738.

¹⁹Critics have noted the resemblance between Sellers and Jesse Leathers, one of Twain's distant relatives. John W. Chapman, in "The Germ of a Book," Atlantic Monthly, CL (December, 1932), 720-21, has quoted a passage from one of Twain's letters as a reason why Twain always kept Sellers from succeeding in his wild schemes. Twain had written, "It is only as a failure that such a person is harmless; it would be clearly a crime against society to make him a 'success' in life, since this would be to add another Jay Gould to the world's burdens."

coach standing outside the door, and Twain immediately replied, "Business man's ideal. Business man's ideal." Twain, in his Conquering Yankee, once more pointed out the dangers of speculation:

Right-entrance is a most childish-headed trader, and it is better hard work, too, but I begin to see that there is money in it, after all. If you have luck, not that I would ever engage in it as a business; for I wouldn't. No sound and lasting business can be established on a basis of speculation.

Usually considered Twain's greatest indictment of speculation is The Gilded Age. The inimitable Colonel Sellers, along with his cohorts and the Washington politicians, is a satire on corrupt and impractical financial schemes. Lucy Lockwood Hazard has said the book was written, not in admiration of the ingenuities and greed . . . displayed by these shadowy manipulators of public funds, but in passionate disgust at the fraud and shrewdness by which the successful

Thomas Alva Edison, "Excerpt from a letter by Thomas Alva Edison to Gail Clements," Overland Monthly, LXXVII (April, 1902), 102.

Clements, A. Conquering Yankee is Mark Twain's Court, pp. 411, p. 733.

Twain have noted the resemblance between Sellers and Jesse Leathers, one of Twain's distant relatives. John W. Chapman, in "The Gears of a Book," Atlantic Monthly, (December, 1932), 720-21, has quoted a passage from one of Twain's letters as a reason why Twain always kept Sellers from succeeding in his wild schemes. Twain had written: "It is only as a failure that such a person is harmless; it would be utterly a crime against society to make him a success in life, since this would be to add another lay to the world's burdens."

arrive at their success."²⁰ DeLancey Ferguson has, however, questioned the effectiveness of the satire in The Gilded Age. He agreed that in the satire the ". . . underlying idea had a certain grandeur: to show how the speculative fever united the destinies and warped the lives of all sorts and conditions of men."²¹ Twain, however, in his part of the novel did not stop at criticizing speculation, but tried to attack all sorts of existing national abuses.²² Ferguson concluded, "In short, what might have been a high-powered bullet, piercing to the heart of a corrupt political system, became a charge of birdshot which peppered everything in sight but left no permanent scars."²³ It is true, though, that Colonel Sellers is at his best in this novel, and Twain has in this man characterized for all time in American literature the speculative fever of the post-Civil War period. Few readers will forget Sellers entertaining Washington Hawkins and glibly explaining the candle in place of a fire in the stove, and the water and raw turnip meal--both results of his speculative impracticality.²⁴ If Twain had a fault in this characterization, it was making Colonel Sellers so likable and so

²⁰Hazard, The Frontier in American Literature, op. cit., p. 228.

²¹Ferguson, op. cit., p. 168.

²²Ibid., p. 170.

²³Ibid., p. 171.

²⁴Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., I, 71-72, 105-8.

arrive at their success. The...
questioned the effect of the...
He agreed that in the...
a certain...
the...
of men, but...
stop at...
sorts of...
"In short, what...
ing to the...
charge of...
left no...
Belle...
men...
speculative...
will...
explaining...
the water...
interaction...
reaction...

20...
p. 228.
21...
22...
23...
24...
25...
26...
27...
28...
29...
30...

great a comic character that the reader often tends to lose sight of the intended satire.

Twain wrote two other effective satires on the debasing effect of money upon human beings. "The \$30,000 Bequest" shows the moral disintegration which pride in wealth brought to a couple. Their dreams of wealth which never did materialize, eventually ruined their lives. At the end of his life the disappointed husband said:

Vast wealth, acquired by sudden and unwholesome means, is a snare. It did us no good, transient were its feverish pleasures; yet for its sake we threw away our sweet and simple and happy life--let others take warning by us.²⁵

Carl Van Doren said of this story, "What Mark Twain had once thought hugely comic in Colonel Sellers he had now come, after his own hot hopes and disappointments, to regard as one of the first of follies, if not of offenses."²⁶ The second story, one of Twain's greatest achievements, was "The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg." This is a supreme example of the evil effect of money upon humanity. Twain, in brutally biting satire, lays bare the inmost thoughts of the greedy citizens. Here, however, as in almost all of his

²⁵Clemens, The \$30,000 Bequest, and Other Stories, op. cit., p. 46.

²⁶Van Doren, The American Novel 1789-1939, op. cit., p. 157.

great a comic character that the reader often cannot be free

sight of the intended satire.

Twain wrote two other effective satires on the de-

basating effect of money upon human beings. "The \$30,000

"Baddest" shows the moral deterioration which results in

wealth brought to a couple. Their dreams of wealth which

never did materialize, eventually ruined their lives. At

the end of his life the disappointed husband said:

"I was wealthy, acquired by cunning and dishonest means
as a snare. It did me no good, except to make me
very pleasant; but for the rest it was a very bad
thing. I was happy and glad to live, but I was not
ing by me."

Carl Van Doren said of this story, "What Carl Twain had

once thought hugely comic in Colonel Sellers he had now

come, after his own hot hopes and disappointments, to regard

as one of the first of failures, if not of offenses."

second story, one of Twain's greatest masterpieces, was "The

Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg." This is a supreme example

of the evil effect of money upon humanity. Twain, in pre-

cally biting satire, lays bare the inner thoughts of the

greedy citizens. Here, however, as in almost all of his

250
pp. 211, p. 212.
pp. 211, p. 212.

250
pp. 211, p. 212.
pp. 211, p. 212.

greatest social criticism, he is attacking not a specific institution, custom, or abuse, but is voicing his disgust at man's own inherent faults and weaknesses.

Mark Twain did not always attack the evils brought on by money, big business, and speculation. There were several occasions when he either took a noncommittal attitude or else showed more admiration than reproof of a person or condition. Twain always liked business to be big; small commercial ventures drew his disgust. In Innocents Abroad he scornfully referred to the size of African stores. "The general size of a store in Tangier is about that of an ordinary shower-bath in a civilized land."²⁷ Despite his nostalgic love of the old-time Hannibal neighborhood, Twain did not lament the passing of all the old landmarks; "Tom Sawyer's cave" had become a lucrative source of Portland Cement, and Twain spoke with satisfaction that the plant cost two million dollars and produced five thousand barrels of cement daily.²⁸ Twain supported a low tariff in A Connecticut Yankee, but in Following the Equator he criticized any sudden drops in the tariff, because lucrative businesses would then suffer from increased competition. Said Twain,

²⁷Clemens, Innocents Abroad, op. cit., p. 80.

²⁸Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., II, 215.

greatest social criticism, he is attacking not a specific institution, custom, or abuse, but is voicing his disgust at man's own inherent faults and weaknesses.

Mark Twain did not always attack the evils wrought on by money, big business, and speculation. There were several occasions when he either took a noncommittal attitude or else showed more admiration than reproach of a person or condition. Twain always liked business to be big; small commercial ventures drew his disapproval. In Innocence Abroad he repeatedly referred to the size of things. "The general size of a store in Tangier is about that of an ordinary shower-bath in a civilized land." Despite his nostalgic love of the old-time frontier neighborhood, Twain did not lament the passing of all the old landmarks. "Tom Sawyer's cave" had become a lucrative source of Portland Cement, and Twain speaks with satisfaction that the plant cost two million dollars and produced five thousand barrels of cement daily.²⁸ Twain supported a low tariff in A Log-rolling Yankee, but in Following the Engineer he criticized any sudden drop in the tariff, because lucrative businesses would then suffer from increased competition. Said Twain,

²⁷Clemens, Innocence Abroad, op. cit., p. 80.

²⁸Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., p. 11.

"A man invests years of work and a vast sum of money in a worthy enterprise, upon the faith of existing laws; then the law is changed, and the man is robbed by his own government."²⁹ This is the laissez-faire pro-monopolistic philosophy which Twain so often held. In addition to this attitude, Twain was always on the lookout for a "good thing" in business. On many occasions he showed an interest in how other people could make large sums of money. A notebook reference to the Sandwich Islands is a good example:

Sea Island cotton picked every day in the year--stalks cut off every Jan.--no frost--sure crop, worth \$1 a pound in Liverpool or Havre--worth any price--adulterate silk goods with it. 1000 acres this land in bend of head of this island worth \$2 to \$20 an acre. Raised 30,000 lbs. last year--will raise 50,000 this. All that is needed is labor--industry--natives won't pick it every day--lazy and shiftless.³⁰

Another example is the comment by "The Boss" in the Connecticut Yankee the day before the predicted eclipse:

I was even impatient for to-morrow to come, I so wanted to gather in that great triumph and be the center of all the nation's wonder and reverence. Besides, in a business way it would be the making of me; I knew that.³¹

Evidence in the latter portion of this chapter will show that Twain, like "The Boss," was keenly interested in financial success. Any scheme with a promise of large financial re-

²⁹Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., I, 209.

³⁰Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., pp. 18-19.

³¹Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee, op. cit., p. 677.

"A man invests years of work and a vast sum of money in a worthy enterprise, upon the faith of existing laws; then the law is changed, and the man is robbed by his own government."²⁹ This is the laissez-faire pro-monopolistic philosophy which Twain so often held. In addition to this attitude, Twain was always on the lookout for a "good thing" in business. On many occasions he showed an interest in how other people could make large sums of money. A noticeable reference to the Sandwich Islands is a good example:

See Island cotton picked every day in the year--valued at every ten--the great--some crop, worth \$1 a pound in Liverpool or Havre--worth any price--valued at silk goods with it. 1000 acres this land in hand at head of this island worth \$1 to \$20 an acre. Raised 30,000 lbs. last year--will raise 50,000 this. All that is needed is labor--industry--natives won't pick it every day--lazy and shiftless.³⁰

Another example is the comment by "The Boss" in the *League*:

There's Yankee the day before the predicted collapse!

I was even impatient for to-morrow to come. I so wanted to gather in that great fortune and be the center of all the nation's wonder and reverence. Besides, in a business way it would be the making of me; I knew that.³¹

Evidence in the latter portion of this chapter will show that Twain, like "The Boss," was keenly interested in financial success. Any scheme with a promise of large financial re-

²⁹Clemens, *Following the Leader*, pp. 444, 445, 446.

³⁰Clemens, *Mark Twain's Notebook*, pp. 414, 415, 416.

³¹Clemens, *A Connecticut Yankee*, pp. 414, 415.

muneration had a fatal attraction for Twain.

The two best examples of his failure to criticize big business were his attitudes toward Standard Oil and Christian Science. He could have become allied with the muckraking movement when George Warner, of the Hartford Warner family, offered Twain's publishing company a book arraigning the Standard Oil trust. Warner told Twain:

There is a splendid chance open to you. I know a man--a prominent man--who has written a book that will go like wildfire; a book that arraigns the Standard Oil fiends, and gives them unmitigated hell, individual by individual. It is the very book for you to publish; there is a fortune in it, and I can put you in communication with the author.³²

Twain, however, had been assisted during his bankruptcy and period of heavy financial indebtedness by Henry H. Rogers of the Standard Oil Company. Twain simply turned down the offer, but later wrote privately:

I wanted to say . . . the only man I care for in the world; the only man I would give a damn for; the only man who is lavishing his sweat and blood to save me and mine from starvation and shame, is a Standard Oil fiend. If you know me, you know whether I want the book or not.³³

Twain again failed to criticize the methods of big business when he wrote about the Christian Science movement. His book, Christian Science, criticizes aspects of the new faith,

³²Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 612-13.

³³Loc. cit.

murderation had a fatal attraction for Twain.

The two best examples of his failure to criticize his business were his attitudes toward Standard Oil and Christian

Science. He could have become allied with the movement when George Warner, of the Hartford Warner family,

offered Twain's publishing company a book arranging the

Standard Oil trust. Warner told Twain:

There is a splendid chance open to you. I know a man--a prominent man--who has written a book that will go like wildfire; a book that arranges the Standard Oil trusts, and gives them unmitigated hell, individually, and gives them the very book for you to publish. It is the very book for you to publish. There is a fortune in it, and I can put you in communication with the author.

Twain, however, had been assisted during his penmanship and period of heavy financial indebtedness by Henry H. Rogers of the Standard Oil Company. Twain simply turned down the offer, but later wrote privately:

I wanted to say . . . the only man I care for in the world; the only man I would give a damn for; the only man who is lavishing his sweat and blood to save me and mine from starvation and shame, is a Standard Oil fellow. If you know me, you know whether I want the book or not.

Twain again failed to criticize the methods of big business when he wrote about the Christian Science movement. His book, Christian Science, criticizes aspects of the new faith.

320 Clements, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 612-13.

321 loc. cit.

and more especially its leader, Mrs. Mary Baker Eddy. There were times, however, when the tremendous business possibilities of the new religion, with its air-tight monopoly, caused Twain in his writings to approach admiration of the religion's business aspects. Twain said Mrs. Eddy was characterized by great business acumen, ambition, selfishness, and intelligent daring--all the qualities needed for financial success.³⁴ He poked fun at her because she copyrighted everything upon which she laid her hands,³⁵ but it should be observed that Twain himself followed this practice, and even registered his pseudonym as a trademark. The most remarkable feature of Christian Science, according to Twain, was its organization:

The Christian Scientist has taken a force which has been lying idle in every member of the human race since time began, and has organized it, and backed the business with capital, and concentrated it at Boston headquarters in the hands of a small and very competent Trust, and there are results.³⁶

One of Twain's other comments is characteristic because it not only lists some of the evils which the Christian Science monopoly could cause, but also shows a feeling of awe at the stupendous material power possible in the new religion:

It is a reasonably safe guess that in America in 1920

³⁴Samuel L. Clemens, Christian Science (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907), p. 201.

³⁵Ibid., p. 113.

³⁶Ibid., p. 63.

there will be ten million Christian Scientists, and three millions in Great Britain; that these figures will be trebled in 1930; that in America in 1920 the Christian Scientists will be a political force, in 1930 politically formidable, and in 1940 the governing power in the Republic--to remain that, permanently. And I think it a reasonable guess that the Trust (which is already in our day pretty brusque in its ways) will then be the most insolent and unscrupulous and tyrannical politico-religious master that has dominated a people since the palmy days of the Inquisition. And a stronger master than the strongest of bygone times, because this one will have a financial strength not dreamed of by any predecessor; as effective a concentration of irresponsible power as any predecessor has had; in the railway, the telegraph, and the subsidized newspaper, better facilities for watching and managing his empire than any predecessor has had; and, after a generation or two, he will probably divide Christendom with the Catholic Church.³⁷

Mark Twain always had a respect for the "big outlaw," and he placed Mrs. Eddy in this group. Had she been less ambitious, Twain probably would have brutally excoriated her, but her aims seemed to Twain so astounding that he could not help tempering his criticism with admiration for her financial power:

It is curious and interesting to note with what an unerring instinct the Pastor Emeritus has thought out and forecast all possible encroachments upon her planned autocracy, and barred the way against them, in the By-laws which she framed and copyrighted--under the guidance of the Supreme Being.³⁸

Twain concluded that Mrs. Eddy was establishing a rule exactly like the Spanish Inquisition:

³⁷Ibid., p. 53-54.

³⁸Ibid., p. 120.

There will be no single one-sided solution to these problems in the near future. The only way to solve them will be to find a way to make the world a better place. This is a task that will require the cooperation of all nations and all peoples. It is a task that will require the wisdom and courage of all who are concerned with the future of the world. It is a task that will require the help of all who are willing to make sacrifices for the good of the world. It is a task that will require the support of all who are willing to stand up for the principles of justice and freedom. It is a task that will require the help of all who are willing to work together for the common good of the world.

Mark Twain always had a respect for the law. He was a man who believed in the law and in the rights of the individual. He was a man who believed in the power of the law to bring about justice and peace. He was a man who believed in the importance of the law in the life of the individual and in the life of the nation. He was a man who believed in the need for the law to be respected and to be enforced. He was a man who believed in the need for the law to be fair and to be just. He was a man who believed in the need for the law to be a guide for the individual and for the nation.

power:
It is obvious that the law is a power. It is a power that is given to the individual and to the nation. It is a power that is used to bring about justice and peace. It is a power that is used to protect the rights of the individual and to protect the rights of the nation. It is a power that is used to enforce the principles of justice and freedom. It is a power that is used to make the world a better place. It is a power that is used to bring about the common good of the world.

Twain recognized that the law is a power. He recognized that the law is a power that is given to the individual and to the nation. He recognized that the law is a power that is used to bring about justice and peace. He recognized that the law is a power that is used to protect the rights of the individual and to protect the rights of the nation. He recognized that the law is a power that is used to enforce the principles of justice and freedom. He recognized that the law is a power that is used to make the world a better place. He recognized that the law is a power that is used to bring about the common good of the world.

Twain
1864-1910

None but accepted and well-established gods can venture an affront like that and do it with confidence. But the human race will take anything from that class. Mrs. Eddy knows the human race; knows it better than any mere human being has known it in a thousand centuries. My confidence in her human-beingship is getting shaken, my confidence in her god-ship is stiffening.³⁹

II. TWAIN'S CONNECTION WITH THE GREAT BARBECUE

In many different ways Twain was either actively connected with the financiers of the Gilded Age or else in his own activities resembled the big tycoons. Having grown up in a family which had known financial privations, it was only natural that he should covet money, and when he did amass a fortune he lived luxuriously. When traveling in Europe, he always reserved an entire railroad car for his small family so that other passengers would not bother them.⁴⁰ The Clemens family also reserved private dining rooms in the European hotels, and their servant Katy Leary said the family lived "Always just like royalty."⁴¹ Since the family took twenty-five steamer trunks with them on European visits,⁴² her statement seems justified. Dorothy Waples has also described Twain's luxurious mode of living:

He became so prosperous that in the year 1881 he spent

³⁹Ibid., p. 184.

⁴⁰Mary Lawton, A Lifetime with Mark Twain, The Memories of Katy Leary, for Thirty Years his Faithful and Devoted Servant (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1925), pp. 120-21.

⁴¹Ibid., p. 122.

None but accepted and well-established ends can come
 ture an effort like that and do it with confidence.
 But the human race will take anything from that class.
 Mrs. Eddy knows the human race; knows it better than any
 were human being has known it in a thousand centuries.
 My confidence in her human-being is getting shaken.
 My confidence in her god-ship is stilling.

II. TWIN'S CONNECTION WITH THE GREAT BARRAGE

In many different ways Twin was either actively con-
 nected with the financiers of the Glided Age or else in the
 own activities resembled the big tycoons. Having grown up
 in a family which had known financial privations, it was
 only natural that he should covet money, and when he did
 amass a fortune he lived luxuriously. When traveling in
 Europe, he always reserved an entire railroad car for his
 small family so that other passengers would not bother them.
 The Clemens family also reserved private dining rooms in the
 European hotels, and their servant Katy Leary said the fam-
 ily lived "Always just like royalty."¹ Since the family
 took twenty-five steamer trunks with them on European visits,
 her statement seems justified. Dorothy Waples has also de-
 scribed Twin's luxurious mode of living:
 He became so prosperous that in the year 1881 he spent

¹ Ibid., p. 184.

² Mary Lawton, *A Lifetime with Mark Twain, The Mem-
 oirs of Katy Leary, for Thirty Years his Faithful and
 Devoted Servant* (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1927),
 pp. 120-21.

³ Ibid., p. 122.

over \$100,000. In 1906, when his wife had died and most of the time he lived alone, his expenses were more than \$50 a day. Between 1875 and the end of the century, he was always looking for something with "millions in it."⁴³

Even Twain's financial setbacks did not cause him to live like a pauper. After his business failure, he still ordered private railroad cars for the New York to Elmira trip,⁴⁴ and when he moved to Europe in order to economize, was highly pleased because he could live in Austria for only six hundred dollars a month!⁴⁵

Mark Twain knew Andrew Carnegie, liked him, and upon at least one occasion tried to interest him in a business venture, the "Library of American Literature."⁴⁶ Twain sounded like one of the money-mad tycoons when he published General Grant's memoirs. He realized he had a "good thing," and intended to give the Grant family the largest profits

⁴³Waples, op. cit., p. 52.

⁴⁴Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, Samuel Charles Webster, editor (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1946), p. 259.

⁴⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 670.

⁴⁶Ibid., II, 578.

over \$100,000. In 1906, when his wife had died and most of the time he lived alone, his expenses were very small, \$50 a day. Between 1875 and the end of the century he was always looking for something with "millions in it."

Even Twain's financial setbacks did not cause him to live like a pauper. After his business failures, he still ordered private railroad cars for the New York to Europe trip, and when he moved to Europe in order to economize, was highly pleased because he could live in Austria for only six hundred dollars a month.

Mark Twain knew Andrew Carnegie, liked him, and at least one occasion tried to interest him in a business venture, the "Library of American Literature." Twain sounded like one of the money-hungry tycoons when he published General Grant's memoirs. He realized he had a "good thing" and intended to give the Grant family the largest profit.

¹Webster, op. cit., p. 22.

²Samuel L. Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, General Charles Webster, editor (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1946), p. 229.

³Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 228.

⁴ibid., II, 228.

ever derived from a book.⁴⁷ He wrote in his notebook after publication of the Grant memoirs, "If I pay the General in silver coin (at \$12 per pound) it will weigh 17 tons."⁴⁸ Twain's close friends, the financial tycoons of Hartford, were mentioned by "Dan De Quille" in the introduction to his book on Washoe. De Quille had finished the book at Twain's house, and he wrote to his Western friends:

I think I have about conquered my awe of these New Englanders and the grand old city of Hartford. . . . They are very religious here---they worship God and greenbacks. Greenbacks six days in the week, and God all the spare time they can find on the remaining day. . . .⁴⁹

Perhaps the best example of Twain's reaction to money was his attitude toward his own literary career. He once said, "There is no satisfaction in the world's praise anyhow, and it has no worth to me save in the way of business."⁵⁰

⁴⁷It should be noted that Twain, always eager to make a fortune, was also willing to help certain other people in financial matters. In addition to the liberal royalties which he, as a publisher, gave to his friends, he for many years virtually supported his brother Orion, and his family. He also gave money to other relatives, and upon many occasions lectured for charity after turning down lucrative financial offers to speak in the same town.

⁴⁸Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 180.

⁴⁹Wright, op. cit., p. xxii.

⁵⁰Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 66.

ever derived from a book. He wrote in his notebook after publication of the Grant memoirs, "If I pay the General in silver coin (at \$12 per pound) it will weigh 17 tons." Twain's close friends, the financial tycoons of Hartford, were mentioned by "Dan De Quille" in the introduction to his book on Washoe. De Quille had finished the book at Twain's house, and he wrote to his Western friends:

I think I have about comprehended my use of these New Englanders and the grand old city of Hartford. They are very religious here--they worship God and greenbacks. Greenbacks six days in the week, and God all the spare time they can find on the remaining day.

Perhaps the best example of Twain's reaction to money was his attitude toward his own literary career. He once said, "There is no satisfaction in the world's praise any how, and it has no worth to me save in the way of business."

It should be noted that Twain, always eager to make a fortune, was also willing to help certain other people in financial matters. In addition to the liberal royalties which he, as a publisher, gave to his friends, he for many years virtually supported his brother Orion, and his family. He also gave money to other relatives, and upon many occasions lectured for charity after turning down lucrative financial offers to speak in the same town.

8Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, pp. 211, p. 180.
2Twain, pp. 211, p. 211.
2Waggoner, pp. 211, p. 66.

Lucy Lockwood Hazard has commented:

Throughout his life we find him involved in one speculative scheme after another. He was always quite as much the speculator as the author--often an author only that he might finance the latest pet speculation or retrieve the breach it had made in his fortune.⁵¹

This idea is borne out completely by Twain's own admissions. When he was a secretary in Washington he continued to write newspaper letters because ". . . they pay best and that is what I work for. . . ." ⁵² Before writing Innocents Abroad he wrote to his mother, "But I had my mind made up to one thing--I wasn't going to touch a book unless there was money in it, and a good deal of it."⁵³ Twain later said, "The 'Innocents Abroad' paid me 12 to \$1500 a month--the next book will pay considerably more."⁵⁴ For years Twain tried to purchase the copyrights to his books in order to obtain a higher percentage of profits, and all through his literary career he fought actively for international copyright protection. He even made several trips to Washington, and called on President Cleveland personally in his efforts to secure adequate legislation. If there was a possibility

⁵¹Hazard, The Frontier in American Literature, op. cit., p. 222.

⁵²Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters to Will Bowen, op. cit., pp. 15-16.

⁵³Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 145.

⁵⁴Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, op. cit., p. 117.

Lucy Lockwood Hazard has commented:

Throughout his life we find him involved in one speculative scheme after another. He was always quite as much the speculator as the author—often an author only that he might finance the latest pet speculation or retrieve the breach it had made in his fortune.²¹

This idea is borne out completely by Twain's own admission. When he was a secretary in Washington he continued to write newspaper letters because "... they pay best and that is what I work for." "52 Before writing *Innocents Abroad* he wrote to his mother, "But I had my mind made up to one thing—I wasn't going to touch a book unless there was money in it, and a good deal of it."⁵³ Twain later said, "The 'Innocents Abroad' paid me 12 to \$1500 a month—the next book will pay considerably more."⁵⁴ For years Twain tried to purchase the copyrights to his books in order to obtain a higher percentage of profits, and all through his literary career he fought actively for international copyright protection. He even made several trips to Washington and called on President Cleveland personally in his efforts to secure adequate legislation. If there was a possibility

²¹Hazard, *The Frontier in American Literature*, op. cit., p. 222.

⁵²Clemens, *Mark Twain's Letters to Will Bowen*, op. cit., pp. 15-16.

⁵³Clemens, *Mark Twain's Letters*, op. cit., I, 167.

⁵⁴Clemens, *Mark Twain, Business Man*, op. cit., p. 117.

of earning more money from his books, he was only too eager to campaign. Even in his last years he thought of literature primarily as a money-making device. In 1904 he wrote in his notebook, "Lay abed nearly all day, but wrote 3,000 words, earning \$900."⁵⁵ He always rated his literary output by the quantity or the money it would pay him, not its quality. In light of this evidence, Brooks' decision about Twain and money is justified:

It is only with all this in mind that we can grasp Mark Twain's instinctive conception of the literary career. He never thought of literature as an art, as the study and occupation of a lifetime: it was merely the line of activity which he followed more consistently than any other. Primarily, he was the business man, exploiting his imagination for commercial profit, his objects being precisely those of any other business man--to provide for his family, to gain prestige, to make money because other people made money and to make more money than other people made.⁵⁶

A further look at Twain's own life will show why he never became a great satirist of wild speculation. On a few occasions he did point out the dangers of speculation, but more often he was too busy engaging in speculation himself or attempting to obtain monopolies in different fields.

The list of his business ventures and speculations is so tremendous that it is surprising he ever produced any

⁵⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 385.

⁵⁶Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 144.

of earning more money from his books, he was only too eager to campaign. Even in his last years he thought of literature primarily as a money-making device. In 1904 he wrote in his notebook, "I am paid nearly all day, but write 3,000 covers, earning \$900.00." He always rated his literary output by the quantity of the money it would pay him, not its quality. In light of this evidence, Brooks' decision about Twain and money is justified:

It is only with all this in mind that we can grasp Mark Twain's instinctive conception of the literary career. He never thought of literature as an art, as the study and occupation of a lifetime; it was merely the line of activity which he followed more consistently than any other. Primarily, he was the business man, exploiting his imagination for commercial profit, his objective being precisely those of any other business man, and aside for his family, to gain prestige, to make money, to cause other people to make money and to make more money than other people made.⁵⁰

A further look at Twain's own life will show why he never became a great master of this specialized art. On occasions he did point out the dangers of specialization; more often he was too busy engaging in speculation himself or attempting to obtain monopolies in different fields. The list of his business ventures and speculations is so tremendous that it is surprising he ever produced any

⁵⁰ Clements, *Mark Twain's Notebook*, pp. 211, 212, 213.

⁵¹ Brooks, *The Gospel of Mark Twain*, pp. 11, 12.

literature. This is possibly the first time Twain's speculative ventures have been collected in a reasonably complete list. When still a Mississippi Pilot he advised Orion to speculate in Keokuk land.⁵⁷ After he went to Washoe, he once held stock in fifty different mines.⁵⁸ Twain thought himself supremely qualified for financial dealings in Washoe, and wrote to his mother:

. . . I am at the helm, now. I have convinced Orion that he hasn't business talent enough to carry on a peanut stand, and he has solemnly promised me that he will meddle no more with mining, or other matters not connected with the Secretary's office.⁵⁹

Needless to say, he never made his fortune either in mining or in mining stock speculation. Mining stock continued to intrigue him during his San Francisco period, and one of the reasons for his financial embarrassment after leaving the San Francisco Call was a failure in Hale and Norcross stock, in which Twain owned many shares.⁶⁰

Twain's Hartford period, before his business crash, was filled with an unbelievable number of schemes and speculations. He invested \$5,000 in the American Publishing

⁵⁷Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, op. cit., p. 32.

⁵⁸Mack, op. cit., p. 132.

⁵⁹Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 67.

⁶⁰Ferguson, op. cit., p. 100.

literature. This is possibly the first time Twain's speculative ventures have been collected in a reasonably complete list. When still a Mississippi pilot he advised John to speculate in stock land.⁵⁷ After he went to Washington once held stock in fifty different mines.⁵⁸ Twain thought himself supremely qualified for financial dealings in Washington and wrote to his mother:

... I am at the helm, now. I have convinced Orion that he hasn't business talent enough to carry on a peasant stand, and he has solemnly promised me that he will meddle no more with mining, or other matters not connected with the Secretary's office.⁵⁹

Needless to say, he never made his fortune either in mining or in mining stock speculation. Mining stock continued to intrigue him during his San Francisco period, and one of the reasons for his financial embarrassment after leaving the San Francisco Call was a failure in Hale and Hagerman stock, in which Twain owned many shares.⁶⁰

Twain's Hartford period, before his business crash, was filled with an unbelievable number of schemes and speculations. He invested \$5,000 in the American Publishing

⁵⁷Clemens, *Mark Twain: Business Man*, pp. 211, 2. 32.

⁵⁸Wash., pp. 211, p. 132.

⁵⁹Clemens, *Mark Twain's Letters*, pp. 211, 1, 67.

⁶⁰Ferguson, pp. 211, p. 100.

Company, one of his few wise moves.⁶¹ He also invested an undetermined amount in a Fredonia, New York, watch company, but received no returns.⁶² Another investment upon which he received a few dividends was five hundred dollars' worth of Booklover's Library shares, two hundred shares in all.⁶³ Through his connection with the Grant family, he became interested in a company intending to build a railroad from Constantinople to the Persian Gulf. Nothing developed from this scheme.⁶⁴ He lost a large sum on a steam generator, lost \$32,000 on a steam pulley, dropped \$25,000 on a new method of marine telegraphy, lost between \$40,000 and \$50,000 on Kaolatype, a new engraving process, and received nothing from substantial investments in a new cash register and spiral hat pin.⁶⁵ Undaunted by these losses, Twain became interested in the Bierstadt Artotype business in 1881,⁶⁶ was briefly enthusiastic about investing in some California vineyards,⁶⁷ invented and tried to patent a new calendar,⁶⁸

⁶¹Paine, op. cit., II, 725.

⁶²Loc. cit.

⁶³Ibid., III, 1151.

⁶⁴Ibid., II, 829.

⁶⁵Ibid., II, 725.

⁶⁶Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, op. cit., p. 186.

⁶⁷Ibid., p. 217.

⁶⁸Ibid., p. 267.

Company, one of his last moves. He also invested in
undetermined amount in a "radio" but later, when company
but received no return. Another investment was made
he received a few dividends and five hundred dollars
of Booklover's shares, the amount was \$100.
Through his connection with the "radio" he became in-
terested in a company intended to build a radio station
Constantinople to the Persian Gulf. He had a radio set
this scheme. He lost a large sum of money in this
lost \$32,000 on a radio set. He had a radio set
method of using telegraph, but he lost the money
on radio set, a new machine was made, and he lost
from substantial investments in a new radio set.
spiral set was. He was interested in these losses. He was in-
come interested in the interest of the company in 1931.
was briefly enthusiastic about investing in some radio
vineyards. He invested and tried to return a large sum.

ERASE BOND

RENTAL

- 61. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 62. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 63. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 64. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 65. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 66. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 67. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.
- 68. 1931, 11, 15, 1931.

and did the same with a bed clamp supposed to keep babies under the covers.⁶⁹ He also wanted to buy stock in a hand grenade type fire extinguisher,⁷⁰ did buy some Western Union stock,⁷¹ and lost an indefinite amount by speculation on a typewriter company.⁷² Twain had still other business ventures in this period. Two successful ones were the recording of his pen name as a registered trademark,⁷³ and the Mark Twain Scrapbook, which he invented and patented. Put on the market, it brought in large returns for several years.⁷⁴ His other ideas were failures. He was going to make millions by publishing the life of Pope Leo VIII, but since many of the world's Catholics were illiterate, the venture did not pay well.⁷⁵ One of his most absurd ideas was to costume people as Bunyan's characters, take them around the world, photograph them in suitable locales, and make a stereoptical panorama of Pilgrim's Progress which would earn millions in a series

⁶⁹Ibid., p. 279.

⁷⁰Ibid., p. 280.

⁷¹Ibid., p. 296.

⁷²Ibid., p. 310.

⁷³Ferguson, op. cit., p. 212.

⁷⁴Ibid., p. 160.

⁷⁵Ibid., p. 233.

and did the same with a bed clean supposed to keep babies under the covers.⁶⁹ He also wanted to buy stock in a hand grenade type fire extinguisher,⁷⁰ did buy some Western Union stock,⁷¹ and lost an indefinite amount by speculation on a typewriter company.⁷² Twain had still other business ventures in this period. Two successful ones were the recording of his pen name as a registered trademark,⁷³ and the Twain Scrapbook, which he invented and patented. But on the market, it brought in large returns for several years. His other ideas were failures. He was going to make millions by publishing the life of Pope Leo XIII, but since many of the world's Catholics were illiterate, this venture did not pay well.⁷⁴ One of his most absurd ideas was to continue people as Bunyan's characters, take them around the world, photograph them in suitable locales, and make a stereoscopic panorama of Pilgrim's Progress which would earn millions in a series

⁶⁹ Ibid., p. 279.

⁷⁰ Ibid., p. 280.

⁷¹ Ibid., p. 296.

⁷² Ibid., p. 310.

⁷³ Ferguson, op. cit., p. 212.

⁷⁴ Ibid., p. 160.

⁷⁵ Ibid., p. 233.

of world-wide showings. This idea also came to naught.⁷⁶ He lost several thousand dollars on a new method of stamping book covers,⁷⁷ and unsuccessfully invested in mining stock when the Big Bonanza was discovered in Virginia City.⁷⁸ He advised "Dan De Quille" how to publish his mining book, and the book failed completely.⁷⁹ When sculptor Karl Gerhardt modeled a bust of General Grant, Twain had the bust made up in large numbers, but they did not sell and he lost a considerable amount of money.⁸⁰ He also invented a history game in 1883, and thought only of the money that might be earned if the game were marketed.⁸¹

The climax of Twain's business career came when both his Webster Publishing Company and the Paige Typesetter failed. When the Charles L. Webster Company went bankrupt in 1894, it left Twain nearly \$100,000 in debt.⁸² He had also poured over \$300,000 into James W. Paige's invention,⁸³

⁷⁶Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 192.

⁷⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 484.

⁷⁸Mack, op. cit., p. 356.

⁷⁹Wright, op. cit., p. xix.

⁸⁰Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 73.

⁸¹Clemens, Mark Twain, Business Man, op. cit., p. 218.

⁸²Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 14.

⁸³Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 80.

of world-wide showings. This idea also came to naught.⁷⁶
He lost several thousand dollars on a new method of stamping
book covers,⁷⁷ and unsuccessfully invested in mining stock
when the Big Bonanza was discovered in Virginia City.⁷⁸ He
advised "Dan De Quille" how to publish his mining book, and
the book failed completely.⁷⁹ When sculptor Karl Gutzsperger
modeled a bust of General Grant, Tinsley had the bust made up
in large numbers, but they did not sell and he lost a con-
siderable amount of money.⁸⁰ He also intended a history of
the 1880's, and thought only of the money that might be earned
if the same were published.⁸¹

The climax of Tinsley's business career came when both
his Webster Publishing Company and the Tinsley Typewriter
failed. When the Charles L. Webster Company went bankrupt
in 1894, it left Tinsley nearly \$100,000 in debt.⁸² He had
also poured over \$500,000 into James E. Tinsley's invention,⁸³

⁷⁶Clarence, Mark Tinsley's Notebook, op. cit., p. 15.
⁷⁷Clarence, Mark Tinsley's Notebook, op. cit., p. 11.
⁷⁸MacK, op. cit., p. 356.
⁷⁹Wright, op. cit., p. xix.
⁸⁰Howells, My Mark Tinsley, op. cit., p. 73.
⁸¹Clarence, Mark Tinsley, Business Man, op. cit., p. 11.
⁸²Wegenmacher, op. cit., p. 1.
⁸³Howells, My Mark Tinsley, op. cit., p. 80.

and his calculations of its financial possibilities approached the billion mark.⁸⁴ He had written exultingly to his old friend Joe Goodman, "We own the whole field--every inch of it--and nothing can dislodge us."⁸⁵ His servant Katy Leary said:

He was expecting such wonderful things from it. Why, he thought he could buy all New York. He was asking how much it would take to buy all the railroads in New York, and all the newspapers, too--buy everything in New York on account of that typesetting machine. He thought he'd make millions and own the world, because he had such faith in it.⁸⁶

Twain gloated over the machine, and burning with pride, said to Goodman, "I shall be in supreme command. . . ."⁸⁷ But it was a queer kind of prosperity while it lasted, for he later wrote to Goodman:

Now here is a queer fact: I am one of the wealthiest grandees in America--one of the Vanderbilt gang, in fact--and yet if you asked me to lend you a couple of dollars I should have to ask you to take my note instead.⁸⁸

One of the most unfortunate aspects of this fabulous speculation was Twain's refusal to accept the merger of the Paige machine with the Mergenthaler Linotype. Offered a half

⁸⁴Paine, op. cit., II, 906.

⁸⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 517.

⁸⁶Lawton, op. cit., pp. 104-5.

⁸⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 521.

⁸⁸Ibid., II, 534.

and his calculations of the financial possibilities approached the billion mark.⁸⁴ He had written anxiously to his old friend Joe Goodman, "We own the whole field--every inch of it--and nothing can dislodge us."⁸⁵ His servant Katy Barry

said:

He was expecting such wonderful things from it. Why, he thought he could buy all New York. He was asking how much it would take to buy all the railroads in New York, and all the newspapers, too--but everything in New York on account of that typewriting machine. He thought he'd make millions and run the world, because he had such faith in it.⁸⁶

Twain floated over the machine, and burning with pride, said to Goodman, "I shall be in supreme command. . . ."⁸⁷ But it was a queer kind of prosperity while it lasted, for he never

wrote to Goodman:

Now here is a queer fact: I am one of the wealthiest grandees in America--one of the Vanderbilt Gang, in fact--and yet if you asked me to lend you a couple of dollars I should have to ask you to take my note instead.⁸⁸

One of the most unfortunate aspects of this fabulous speculation was Twain's refusal to accept the merger of the Paige machine with the Mergenthaler Linotype. Offered a half

⁸⁴Palme, op. cit., II, 906.

⁸⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's letters, op. cit., II, 373.

⁸⁶Lawton, op. cit., pp. 104-5.

⁸⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's letters, op. cit., II, 321.

⁸⁸Ibid., II, 334.

interest, Twain unwittingly turned down his opportunity to make all those millions about which he had ever dreamed.⁸⁹

One might think that Twain learned his lesson when he went bankrupt and was forced to lecture all over the world, but to the end of his days he was always ready to speculate anew. Fortunately for him, Henry Rogers prevented many of these wild schemes. Among other things he wanted to invest in Sczezepanik's carpet pattern loom:

Within one month after the happy conclusion of those agonizing years of struggle to redress his bankruptcy, he was negotiating with an Austrian inventor for a machine that was to be used to control the carpet-weaving industries of the world, planning a company to be capitalized at fifteen hundred million dollars.⁹⁰

Twain would have taken a \$1,500,000 option on this potential monopoly had not Rogers prevented him.⁹¹ He also planned to start a magazine, but nothing ever came of the idea.⁹² Late in his life he regretted that the Clemens family had gradually sold all of the Tennessee land. He said oil was discovered there in 1895, and in his *Autobiography* he commented, "I wish I owned a couple of acres of the land now, in which case I would not be writing autobiographies for a living."⁹³ When

⁸⁹Ferguson, *op. cit.*, p. 234.

⁹⁰Brooks, *The Ordeal of Mark Twain*, *op. cit.*, p. 133.

⁹¹Paine, *op. cit.*, II, 1056.

⁹²Clemens, *Mark Twain, Business Man*, *op. cit.*, p. 353.

⁹³Clemens, *Mark Twain's Autobiography*, *op. cit.*, I, 89.

Twain died, 375 shares of Plasmon Milk Products stock were found in his effects. Purchased late in his life for 5,000 pounds, the shares were worth about one hundred dollars.⁹⁴

Thus his business ventures proved remarkably unsuccessful. One of his most perceptive statements about himself pertained to this topic. He said, "My axiom is, to succeed in business: avoid my example."⁹⁵ In light of these activities carried on by Twain, The Gilded Age becomes a weak arraignment, indeed, of big business, monopoly, and speculation. The conclusions which may be drawn from this chapter are threefold. First, Mark Twain did criticize certain financial practices of the Gilded Age, but this criticism was not of the highest order. Second, he wanted to make money himself, and did not desire to jeopardize his position by attacking business practices or institutions which were accepted throughout the nation. Third, he was closely associated with the moneyed class in America. After becoming a successful writer, he lived in sumptuous luxury, and constantly speculated in the hope of obtaining a monopoly or amassing a gigantic fortune. Instead of becoming the supreme critic of the Great Barbecue, Mark Twain was one of the many men who helped gild the age.

⁹⁴Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 161, and Paine, op. cit., II, 1058.

⁹⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., p. 238.

Twain died, 377 shares of Placerville stock were found in his effects. Purchased late in his life for 500 pounds, the shares were worth about one hundred dollars. Thus his business ventures proved remarkably successful. One of his most perceptive statements about himself pertained to this topic. He said, "My axiom is, to succeed in business, avoid my example." ⁹² In light of these activities carried on by Twain, the Gilbey has become a well-arrangement, indeed, of his business, monopoly, and speculation. The conclusions which may be drawn from this chapter are threefold. First, Mark Twain did criticize certain financial practices of the Gilbey Age, but this criticism was not of the highest order. Second, he wanted to make money himself, and did not desire to jeopardize his position by attacking business practices or institutions which were accepted throughout the nation. Third, he was closely associated with the moneyed class in America. After becoming a successful writer, he lived in sumptuous luxury, and constantly speculated in the hope of obtaining a monopoly or amassing a gigantic fortune. Instead of becoming the supreme critic of the Great Barbecue, Mark Twain was one of the many men who helped kill the age.

⁹¹Waggoner, *op. cit.*, p. 161, and Paine, *op. cit.*, II, 1028.

⁹²Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, *op. cit.*, p. 238.

CHAPTER VI

MINORITY GROUPS

Mark Twain, the champion of the "little people," often had much to say about the various minority groups in the United States. If a group was the subject of abuse and persecution, he usually came to the rescue. There were occasions, however, when he strangely ignored minorities. It is the purpose of this chapter to determine Twain's cognizance of minority problems in the United States, and the extent of his concern for these racial groups.

I. SPANISH-AMERICANS

The Spanish and Mexican people in the American West have been completely ignored by Twain. He mentioned the Chinese in Washoe, but said nothing of the many Mexican miners there. Dan De Quille had said:

The business of working silver-mines was then new to our people, and at first they depended much on what was told them by the Mexican silver-miners who flocked to the country. Mexicans were in great demand.¹

De Quille also mentioned several of the Spanish expressions used in Washoe, and said many Spanish words were used by miners in their rough anecdotes.² In all his writings Twain

¹Wright, op. cit., p. 84.

²Loc. cit.

CHAPTER VI

MINORITY GROUPS

Mark Twain, the champion of the "little people," often had much to say about the various minority groups in the United States. If a group was the subject of abuse and persecution, he usually came to the rescue. There were occasions, however, when he strangely ignored minorities. It is the purpose of this chapter to determine Twain's attitude of minority problems in the United States, and the extent of his concern for these racial groups.

I. SPANISH-AMERICANS

The Spanish and Mexican people in the American West have been completely ignored by Twain. He mentioned the Chinese in Washoe, but said nothing of the many Mexican miners there. Don De Quillie had said:

The business of working silver-mines was then new to our people, and at first they depended much on what was told them by the Mexican silver-miners who flocked to the country. Mexicans were in great demand.¹

De Quillie also mentioned several of the Spanish expressions used in Washoe, and said many Spanish words were used by miners in their rough anecdotes.² In all his writings Twain

¹Wright, op. cit., p. 84.

²loc. cit.

never referred to the use of Spanish expressions by the Washoe miners.

A similar situation existed in California. Unlike his friend Bret Harte, Twain never realized that before the Gold Rush California had once possessed a Spanish culture all its own. Large numbers of Spanish lived there, and considerable antagonism had once existed between them and the many American settlers. There was still much Spanish culture in California during Twain's western years, and Harte wished to capitalize on it. Pattee has said of Harte, "His first dream was to do for the lands of the Spanish missions what Irving had done for the highlands of the Hudson."³ But Mark Twain evidently was not interested in the Spanish minority in the West. Why he was silent about the Spanish race remains one of the many unsolved problems for Twain critics.

II. INDIANS

Once again Twain's attitude was inconsistent, for he both defended and criticized the American Indian. His criticisms were principally in the earlier part of his life when the memories of living in Indian country were still vivid. There was good reason for Twain not to show any love for the Indian, because Washoe was not completely safe from marauding

³Pattee, "The Short Story," Cambridge History of American Literature, op. cit., II, 377.

never referred to the use of Spanish expressions by the Indians as minors.

A similar situation existed in California. During the friend Bret Harte, Twain never realized that before the Gold Rush California had once possessed a Spanish culture all its own. Large numbers of Spaniards lived there, and considerable antagonism had once existed between them and the early American settlers. There was still much Spanish culture in California during Twain's western years, and Harte wished to contribute to it. Harte has said of Twain, "His first dream was to do for the lands of the Spanish culture the thing that Harte did for the highlands of the Hudson." But Twain was evidently not interested in the Spanish minority in the West. For he was silent about the Spanish race remains one of the many unresolved problems for Twain critics.

III. TWAIN

Once again Twain's attitude was inconsistent, for he both defended and criticized the American Indian. His criticisms were principally in the earlier part of his life when the memories of living in Indian country were still vivid. There was good reason for Twain not to show any love for the Indian, because Twain was not completely safe from malaria.

Redmen in the 1860's. A force of 756 white men left Virginia City on May 24, 1860, to defeat the Piute Indians.⁴ This was not long before Twain's arrival in Washoe. Another uprising took place in the spring of 1862 near Owens Lake. Twain saw the burned stage stations while on his way to the Esmeralda mines. Orion, then acting governor of the territory, was highly agitated about the trouble, but Twain was far too interested in making a quick fortune from mining to take more than passing notice of the affair.⁵

At that stage of his career, Twain was not aroused by cruelties to minority groups. Congress had appropriated \$75,000 to build a sawmill for the Indians in Washoe, but while this legislation was suffering many delays, hundreds of Indians froze to death because of inadequate housing.⁶ Twain did not mention this until years later, and he never referred to the plight of the Indians living in Virginia City:

These poor vagabonds once lords of the soil, who had been the proud possessors of all the mountain--were now forced to live on the refuse of the human strata above

⁴Wright, op. cit., p. 81.

⁵Mack, op. cit., p. 157.

⁶Ibid., p. 143. Twain used this incident to further his satire on Congressional ways in The Gilded Age, op. cit., II, 45. It was also a strong defense of the Indians.

Redmen in the 1860's. A force of 750 white men left
Kintz City on May 24, 1860, to defeat the Kintz Indians.
This was not long before Twain's arrival in Washoe. Another
uprising took place in the spring of 1862 near Owens Lake.
Twain saw the burned stage stations while on his way to the
Remondino mines. Orion, then acting governor of the territory,
was highly agitated about the trouble, but Twain was
far too interested in making a quick fortune returning to
take more than passing notice of the affair.
At that stage of his career, Twain was not aroused by

oracles to minority groups. Congress had appropriated
\$25,000 to build a sawmill for the Indians in Washoe, but
while this legislation was suffering many delays, hundreds
of Indians froze to death because of inadequate housing.
Twain did not mention this until years later, and he never
referred to the plight of the Indians living in Virginia

City.

These poor vagabonds once lords of the soil, who had
been the proud possessors of all the mountains--were now
forced to live on the refuse of the human strata above

Twain, op. cit., p. 81.

Twain, op. cit., p. 127.

Twain used this incident to further
his satire on Congressional ways in The Gilded Age, op. cit.,
p. 143. It was also a strong defense of the Indians.

them, or to wander among the back alleys in search of rotten food thrown out by the markets.⁷

Twain criticized Indians on several occasions. In Innocents Abroad he spoke disparagingly of the Digger Indians:

. . . Those degraded savages who roast their dead relatives, then mix the human grease and ashes of bones with tar, and "gaum" it thick all over their heads and foreheads and ears, and go caterwauling about the hills and call it mourning.⁸

He then added:

It isn't worth while, in these practical times, for people to talk about Indian poetry--there never was any in them--except in the Fennimore [sic] Cooper Indians. But they are an extinct tribe that never existed. I know the Noble Red Man. I have camped with the Indians; I have been on the warpath with them, taken part in the chase with them--for grasshoppers; helped them steal cattle; I have roamed with them, scalped them, had them for breakfast. I would gladly eat the whole race if I had a chance.⁹

Some of the Arabs in Palestine reminded him of the American Indians he had seen:

They sat in silence, and with tireless patience watched our every motion with that vile, uncomplaining impoliteness which is so truly Indian, and which makes a white man so nervous and uncomfortable and savage that he wants to exterminate the whole tribe.

These people about us had other peculiarities, which I have noticed in the noble red man, too: they were

⁷Mack, op. cit., p. 184.

⁸Clemens, Innocents Abroad, op. cit., p. 205.

⁹Loc. cit.

them, or to wander among the back alleys in search of rotten food thrown out by the markets.

Twain criticized Indians on several occasions. In

Innocents Abroad he spoke disparagingly of the Digger In-

dians:

... Those degraded savages who roast their hard tails
lives, then mix the human grease and ashes of bones with
tar, and "sassa" it thick all over their heads and faces,
heads and ears, and so caterwauling about the hills and
call it mourning.

He then added:

It isn't worth while, in these practical times, for any
ple to talk about Indian poetry--there never was any in
them--except in the Pamunkey [sic] Cooper Indians. But
they are an extinct tribe that never existed. I know the
Noble Red Man. I have camped with the Indians; I have
been on the warpath with them, taken part in the chase
with them--for grasshoppers; helped them steal cattle;
I have roamed with them, scalped them, had them for
breakfast. I would gladly eat the whole race if I had
a chance.

Some of the Arabs in Palestine reminded him of the American

Indians he had seen:

They sat in silence, and with tireless patience watched
our every motion with that vile, uncomplaining interest
which is so truly Indian, and which makes a white
man so nervous and uncomfortable and savage that he
wants to exterminate the whole tribe.

These people about us had other peculiarities, which
I have noticed in the noble red man, too: they were

⁷Mark, op. cit., p. 184.

⁸Clemens, Innocents Abroad, op. cit., p. 205.

⁹Id. cit.

infested with vermin, and the dirt had caked on them till it amounted to bark.¹⁰

In the Connecticut Yankee Twain made a passing remark about the dull animal nature of the Indian race,¹¹ but his most outstanding criticism of the Indian was in Roughing It, in which the Goshoot Tribe bore the brunt of his attack. While telling of his trip through the West, Twain said, "It was along in this wild country somewhere . . . that we came across the wretchedest type of mankind I have ever seen, up to this writing. I refer to the Goshoot Indians."¹² In describing them Twain spoke of ". . . their faces and hands bearing dirt which they had been hoarding and accumulating for months, years, and even generations, according to the age of the proprietor. . . ."¹³ Twain called them ". . . a silent, sneaking, treacherous-looking race," who were indolent, prideless beggars.¹⁴ Always hungry, they ate food which even hogs spurned, and had ". . . no higher ambition than to kill and eat jackass rabbits, crickets, and grasshoppers, and embezzle carrion from the buzzards and coyotes. . . ."¹⁵

¹⁰Ibid., p. 473.

¹¹Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 666.

¹²Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., I, 154.

¹³Ibid., I, 155.

¹⁴Loc. cit.

¹⁵Loc. cit.

infested with vermin, and the dirt had caked on them till it amounted to bark.¹⁰

In the Connecticut Yankee Twain made a passing remark about the dull animal nature of the Indian race,¹¹ but his most outstanding criticism of the Indian was in Huckleberry Finn in which the Goshoot Tribe bore the brunt of his attack. While telling of his trip through the West, Twain said, "It was along in this wild country somewhere . . . that we came across the wretchedest type of mankind I have ever seen, up to this writing. I refer to the Goshoot Indians."¹² In describing them Twain spoke of ". . . their faces and hands bearing dirt which they had been hearing and accumulating for months, years, and even generations, according to the size of the proprietor. . . ."¹³ Twain called them ". . . silent, sneaking, treacherous-looking race," who were "deafest, prideless beggars."¹⁴ Always hungry, they ate food which even dogs spurned, and had ". . . no higher ambition than to kill and eat jackass rabbits, crickets, and grasshoppers, and amblesse cacti from the burrows and coves . . ."¹⁵

-
- ¹⁰Ibid., p. 473.
¹¹Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 666.
¹²Clemens, Huckleberry Finn, op. cit., p. 154.
¹³Ibid., p. 155.
¹⁴Loc. cit.
¹⁵Loc. cit.

Twain said they produced absolutely nothing and concluded his tirade:

. . . I say that the nausea which the Goshoots gave me, an Indian worshiper, set me to examining authorities, to see if perchance I had been over-estimating the Red Man while viewing him through the mellow moonshine of romance. The revelations that came were disenchanting. It was curious to see how quickly the paint and tinsel fell away from him and left him treacherous, filthy, and repulsive--and how quickly the evidences accumulated that wherever one finds an Indian tribe he has only found Goshoots more or less modified by circumstances and surroundings--but Goshoots, after all. They deserve pity, poor creatures! and they can have mine--at this distance.¹⁶

Then, however, Twain recalled that the name Goshoots had been used insultingly by white men, and this recollection of white injustice finally brought him to a partial defense of the tribe:

. . . However innocent the motive may have been, the necessary effect was to injure the reputation of a class who have a hard enough time of it in the pitiless deserts of the Rocky Mountains, Heaven knows! If we cannot find it in our hearts to give those poor naked creatures our Christian sympathy and compassion, in God's name let us at least not throw mud at them.¹⁷

Had no one else tried to criticize the Goshoots, Twain probably never would have uttered one good word about this.

¹⁶Ibid., I, 157-58.

¹⁷Ibid., I, 158.

Twain said they purchased absolutely nothing and now...

his license

... I say that the reason which the honest man...
an Indian reservation, and as to the matter of...
to see it perhaps I had been somewhat...
the white people, the Indians, the...
romance. The reason for this was...
it was certain to see how things...
tell every thing in the...
representative and...
that however the...
some...
and the...
city, poor...
distance.

Then, however, I...
used...
justice...
cried

... However, I...
necessarily...
and...
of the...
it is...
Christian...
at least...

Had no one else...
probably never...

18
1891, 11-10-91

1891, 11-10-91

particular tribe of Indians.¹⁸

In his later years he sympathized more with the oppressed American Indians. This changed attitude was probably caused by reports of how the Indian tribes were gradually being wiped out. In "Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven," Twain depicted the white man as a freakishly small American minority group; the Indian controlled the "American" part of heaven.¹⁹ Van Wyck Brooks added:

. . . Mark Twain was too tender-hearted to maintain for long a grudge against any variety of under-dog. It was a Piute Indian he had known in Tulare County who received Captain Stormfield when he visited heaven.²⁰

¹⁸Twain was usually humanitarian in his attitude toward less civilized racial groups, but if his pride was insulted, he had nothing but vituperation for the people. An excellent example is Twain's comment in Innocents Abroad, op. cit., p. 463: "It is soothing to the heart to abuse England and France for interposing to save the Ottoman Empire from the destruction it has so richly deserved for a thousand years. It hurts my vanity to see these pagans refuse to eat of food that has been cooked for us; or to eat from a dish we have eaten from; or to drink from a goatskin which we have polluted with our Christian lips, except by filtering the water through a rag which they put over the mouth of it or through a sponge! I never disliked a Chinaman as I do these degraded Turks and Arabs, and when Russia is ready to war with them again, I hope England and France will not find it good breeding or good judgment to interfere."

¹⁹Clemens, "Extract from Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven," op. cit., p. 273.

²⁰Brooks, The Times of Melville and Whitman, op. cit., p. 292.

particular tribe of Indians. 18

In his later years he sympathized more with the oppressed American Indians. This changed attitude was probably caused by reports of how the Indian tribes were gradually being wiped out. In "Captain Stornfield's Visit to Heaven," Twain depicted the white man as a trackingly un-American minority group; the Indian controlled the "American" part of heaven. 19 Van Wyck Brooks added:

... Mark Twain was too tender-hearted to maintain for long a grudge against any variety of under-dog. It was a white Indian he had known in Tolare County who had saved Captain Stornfield when he visited heaven. 20

Twain was usually humanitarian in his attitude toward less civilized racial groups, but in his piece was included, he had nothing but vituperation for the people. An excellent example is Twain's comment in "Innocence Abroad," pp. 215, p. 215: "It is soothing to the heart to hear a land and France for interfering to save the Ottoman Empire from the destruction it has so richly deserved for a thousand years. It hurts my vanity to see those people refuse to eat of food that has been cooked for me; or to eat from a dish we have eaten from; or to drink from a canteen which we have polluted with our Christian lips, except by filtering the water through a rag which they put over the mouth of it or through a sponge! I never disliked a Chinaman as I do those degraded Turks and Arabs, and when Russia is ready to war with them again, I hope England and France will not find it good breeding or good judgment to interfere."

19 Clements, "Extract from Captain Stornfield's Visit to Heaven," pp. 215, p. 215.

20 Brooks, *The Times of Melville and Whitman*, pp. 215, p. 215.

Twain also showed his changed feeling for the Indian, when he wrote in his notebook a brief imaginary conversation between the United States government and a stranger:

"We have killed 200 Indians."

"What did it cost?"

"\$2,000,000."

"You could have given them a college education for that."²¹

In his Autobiography Twain criticized the cruel extermination of American Indians, and went on to attack all the national evils:

. . . Thanksgiving Day, a function which originated in New England two or three centuries ago when those people recognized that they really had something to be thankful for--annually, not oftener--if they had succeeded in exterminating their neighbors, the Indians, during the previous twelve months instead of getting exterminated by their neighbors, the Indians. Thanksgiving Day became a habit, for the reason that in the course of time, as the years drifted on, it was perceived that the exterminating had ceased to be mutual and was all on the white man's side, consequently on the Lord's side; hence it was proper to thank the Lord for it and extend the usual annual compliments. The original reason for a Thanksgiving Day has long ago ceased to exist--the Indians have long ago been comprehensively and satisfactorily exterminated and the account closed with the Lord, with the thanks due. But, from old habit, Thanksgiving day has remained with us, and every year the President of the United States and the Governors of all the several states and territories set themselves the task, every November, to hunt up something to be thankful for, and then they put those thanks into a few crisp

²¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 166.

Twain also showed his changed feeling for the Indians, when he wrote in his notebook a brief fragmentary conversation between the United States government and a stranger:

"We have killed 200 Indians."

"What did it cost?"

"\$2,000,000."

"You could have given them a college education for

that."

In his Autobiography Twain criticized the cruel extermination of American Indians, and went on to attack all the national evils:

... Thanksgiving Day, a function which originated in New England two or three centuries ago when those people recognized that they really had something to be thankful for--annually, not often--if they had succeeded in exterminating their neighbors, the Indians, during the previous twelve months instead of getting exterminated by their neighbors, the Indians. Thanksgiving Day became a habit, for the reason that in the course of time, as the years drifted on, it was perceived that the exterminating had ceased to be mutual and was all on the white man's side, consequently on the Lord's side, hence it was proper to thank the Lord for it and extend the usual annual compliments. The original reason for Thanksgiving Day has long ago ceased to exist--the Indians have long ago been comprehensively and entirely exterminated and the account closed with the Lord, with the thanks due. But, from old habit, Thanksgiving Day has remained with us, and every year the President of the United States and the Governors of all the several states and territories set themselves the task, every November, to hunt up something to be thankful for, and then they put those thanks into a few crisp

and reverent phrases, in the form of a proclamation, and this is read from all the pulpits of the land, the national conscience is wiped clean with one swipe, and sin is resumed at the old stand.²²

III. THE CHINESE

On only two occasions did Twain exhibit any prejudice against the Chinese. When he and Steve Gillis were living in San Francisco, they annoyed the nearby Chinese residents. Paine has told us of their escapades:

They moved a great many times in San Francisco. Their most satisfactory residence was on a bluff on California Street. Their windows looked down on a lot of Chinese houses--"tin can houses," they were called--small wooden shanties covered with beaten-out cans. Steve and Mark would look down on these houses, waiting until all the Chinamen were inside; then one of them would grab an empty beer-bottle, throw it down on those tin-can roofs, and dodge behind the blinds. The Chinamen would swarm out and look up at the row of houses on the edge of the bluff, shake their fists, and pour out Chinese vituperation.

²²Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 291. Another American minority group which Twain defended were the Mormons. In Roughing It, op. cit., II, 346, Twain said ". . . let it be remembered that for forty years these creatures have been driven, driven, driven, relentlessly! and mobbed, beaten, and shot down; cursed, despised, expatriated; banished to a remote desert, whither they journeyed gaunt with famine and disease, disturbing the ancient solitudes with their lamentations and marking the long way with graves of their dead--and all because they were simply trying to live and worship God in the way which they believed with all their hearts and souls to be the true one. Let all these things be borne in mind, and then it will not be hard to account for the deathless hatred which the Mormons bear our people and our government."

and reverent phrases, in the form of a prayer, and
 this is read from all the pulpits of the nation.
 at once as wiped clean with one sweep, and the
 resumed at the old stand.

III. THE CHINESE

On only two occasions did Tsin exhibit any hostility

against the Chinese. When he and Steve Smith were living

in San Francisco, they annoyed the nearby Chinese residents.

Paine has told us of their escapades:

They moved a great many times in San Francisco. Their
 most satisfactory residence was on a street of California
 Street. Their windows looked down on a lot of Chinese
 houses--"tin can houses," they were called--small wooden
 shanties covered with beaten-out canvas. These and their
 would look down on these houses, waiting until the
 Chinese were inside; then one of them would grab an
 empty beer-bottle, throw it down on their heads and
 and badge behind the blind. The Chinese would answer
 out and look up at the row of houses on the other side
 shrill, shake their fists, and pour out a stream of

200. Clements, Mark Leslie's investigation was that
 201. another American minority group which first
 were the Mormons. In 1847, the first of the
 said "... let it be remembered that the first
 ever since have been driven, driven, driven, driven
 and mobbed, beaten, and shot down; killed, killed,
 persecuted; sent to a remote desert, where they
 moved about with families and flocks, disarmed and
 solidified with their independence and making the
 with graves of their dead--and all because they were
 trying to live and worship God in the way which they believed
 with all their hearts and souls to be the true way. Let all
 these things be borne in mind, and then it will not be hard
 to account for the bestial hatred which the Mormons bear
 our people and our government."

By and by, when they had retired and everything was quiet again, their tormentors would throw another bottle. This was their Sunday amusement.²³

Twain's second show of racial superiority was in his twenty-third letter to the Sacramento Union, from Honolulu in 1866.

He related the advantages of coolie labor:

You will have Coolie labor in California some day. It is already forcing its superior claims upon the attention of your great mining, manufacturing and public improvement corporations. You will not always go on paying \$80 and \$100 a month for labor which you can hire for \$5. The sooner California adopted Coolie labor the better it will be for her. It cheapens no labor of men's hands save the hardest and most exhausting drudgery--drudgery which neither intelligence nor education are required to fit a man for--drudgery which all white men abhor and are glad to escape from.²⁴

Despite these two instances of racial prejudice, Twain's lifetime attitude toward the Chinese in America was admirable. Some of his best social criticism came in his San Francisco period when he tried to prevent cruel abuse of the Chinese. Wagenknecht has said, "I know nothing in Mark Twain's career that is more disinterested or more creditable to him than his expose of the wanton cruelties to which Orientals were subjected in California."²⁵ Twain's sketch, "Disgraceful Persecution of a Boy," tells the story of his efforts to help the Chinese. Twain, in describing

²³Paine, op. cit., I, 255.

²⁴Frear, op. cit., p. 406.

²⁵Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 234.

By and by, when I had finished my work, I
sat again, this time looking at the
file. This was my last work.

Twain's second book of travel, "The Innocents
Abroad," was published in 1897. It was
his third letter to the American people.
He related the adventures of his journey.

For all his love of travel, Twain was not
it is already known that he was a
person of great energy, and he was
improvement of his work. He was
paying \$500 a month for his work, and
for \$5. The same day he was paid
better it will be for him. It is
hands have the highest and best of
drugs which neither of his work
regimented to his work. He was
about and was glad to see his work.

Despite these the fact that Twain was
Twain's lifetime of work. He was
about. Some of his best work was
San Francisco. He was paid for his work
of the Chinese. He was paid for his work
with Twain's career. He was paid for his work
credited to his work. He was paid for his work
to which Twain was paid for his work. He was
station. He was paid for his work. He was
of his efforts to help the Chinese. He was

Twain, Mark Twain, 1834-1910.
Twain, Mark Twain, 1834-1910.
Twain, Mark Twain, 1834-1910.

the abuse suffered by Chinese in San Francisco, said:

. . . In many districts of the vast Pacific coast, so strong is the wild, free love of justice in the hearts of the people, that whenever any secret and mysterious crime is committed, they say, 'Let justice be done, though the heavens fall,' and go straightway and swing a Chinaman.²⁶

The one incident which sent Twain into a fury was described in the following sketch:

I have many such memories in my mind, but am thinking just at present of one particular one, where the Brannan Street butchers set their dogs on a Chinaman who was quietly passing with a basket of clothes on his head; and while the dogs mutilated his flesh, a butcher increased the hilarity of the occasion by knocking some of the Chinaman's teeth down his throat with half a brick. This incident sticks in my memory with a more malevolent tenacity, perhaps, on account of the fact that I was in the employ of a San Francisco journal at the time, and was not allowed to publish it because it might offend some of the peculiar element that subscribed for the paper.²⁷

The "peculiar element" referred to were the many Irish subscribers to the San Francisco papers. The sketch was, in part, criticism of the corrupt police (largely Irish immigrants) who only brought to justice children and those poorer people who had no political influence.²⁸

In Roughing It Mark Twain also defended the Chinese. There were many Chinese laborers in Virginia City. From his

²⁶Samuel L. Clemens, "Disgraceful Persecution of a Boy," Sketches New and Old (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1903), p. 114.

²⁷Ibid., p. 147. Twain has never said whether or not he tried to stop the cruel mutilation.

²⁸Ibid., p. 143-48.

the abuse suffered by Chinese in San Francisco, said:
 "... In many districts of the vast Pacific coast, strong is the wild, free love of justice in the hearts of the people, that whenever any secret and mysterious crime is committed, they say, 'Let justice be done, though the heavens fall,' and go straightway and bring a Chinaman."²⁶

The one incident which sent Twain into a fury was described in the following sketch:

I have many such memories in my mind, but the most just at present of one particular one, where the human breast butchers set their dogs on a Chinaman who was quietly passing with a basket of clothes on his head; and while the dogs mutilated his flesh, a butcher crossed the history of the occasion by knocking some of the Chinaman's teeth down his throat with half a brick. This incident sticks in my memory with a most malicious tenacity, perhaps, on account of the fact that I was in the employ of a San Francisco Journal at the time, and was not allowed to publish it because it might offend some of the peculiar element that subsidized the paper.²⁷

The "peculiar element" referred to were the many Irish and Scotch to the San Francisco papers. The sketch was, of course, criticism of the corrupt police (largely Irish and Scotch) who only brought to justice children and those poorer people who had no political influence.²⁸

In Booth's Mark Twain also defended the Chinese. There were many Chinese laborers in Virginia City. From his

²⁶Samuel L. Clemens, "Disgraceful Persecution of a Boy," Sketches New and Old (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1903), p. 114.

²⁷Ibid., p. 147. Twain has never said whether or not he tried to stop the cruel mutilation.

²⁸Ibid., p. 143-44.

observations Twain was led to declare:

A disorderly Chinaman is rare, and a lazy one does not exist. So long as a Chinaman has strength to use his hands he needs no support from anybody; white men often complain of want of work, but a Chinaman offers no such complaint; he always manages to find something to do. He is a great convenience to everybody--even to the worst class of white men, for he bears the most of their sins, suffering fines for their petty thefts, imprisonment for their robberies, and death for their murder. Any white man can swear a Chinaman's life away in the courts, but no Chinaman can testify against a white man. Ours is the "land of the free. . . ."29

He also mentioned the poor Chinese, trying to eke out livings in old abandoned California mines, who were forced to pay a "foreign mining tax" every month by the corrupt state officials.³⁰ He then hastened to assure his readers that upper class Californians did not persecute the Chinese:

Only the scum of the population do it--they and their children; they, and naturally and consistently, the policemen and politicians, likewise, for these are the dust-licking pimps and slaves of the scum, there as well as elsewhere in America.³¹

On still other occasions Twain defended the Chinese. He and Twichell supported the Chinese Educational Mission in Hartford, and he also interceded with General Grant in behalf of the Chinese Minister's industrial program. The minister, Yung Wing, was trying to secure financial aid for

²⁹Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 128.

³⁰Ibid., II, 130.

³¹Ibid., II, 135.

observations Twain was led to declare

A disorderly Chinaman is rare, and a lazy one does not exist. So long as a Chinaman has strength to use his hands he needs no support from anybody; while men often complain of want of work, but a Chinaman offers no such complaint; he always manages to find something to do. He is a great convenience to everybody--even to the worst class of white men, for he bears the most of their sin, suffering fines for their petty thefts, imprisonment for their robberies, and death for their murders. Any white man can swear a Chinaman's life away in the courts, but no Chinaman can testify against a white man. Once in the "land of the free" . . . "59

He also mentioned the poor Chinese, trying to get living in old abandoned California mines, who were lured to pay

"foreign mining tax" every month by the corrupt state of

California.³⁰ He then hastened to assure his readers that

upper class Californians did not persecute the Chinese:

Only the sons of the population do it--they and their children; they, and naturally and constantly, the politicians and politicians, likewise, for these are the best-fitting pigs and slaves of the room, there as well as elsewhere in America.³¹

On still other occasions Twain defended the Chinese:

He and Twichell supported the Chinese Educational Mission in Hartford, and he also interceded with General Grant in behalf of the Chinese Minister's industrial program. The minister, Tong Xiang, was trying to secure financial aid for

³⁰Clemens, *Southwestern II*, pp. 411, 412, 188.

³¹Ibid., II, 130.

³²Ibid., II, 137.

the construction of military railroads in China, and Twain asked Grant to exert some influence. He also asked Grant to help pull strings in order to let some Chinese college students continue their studies in America.³² When Winston Churchill spoke in New York City in 1900, Twain's introduction of the speaker was a defense of the Chinese:

Behold America, the refuge of the oppressed from everywhere (who can pay \$10 admission)--everyone except a Chinaman--standing up for human rights everywhere, even helping to make China let people in free when she wants to collect \$50 from them. . . . And how piously America has wrought for that open door in all cases where it was not her own.³³

Twain's most complete denunciation of American treatment of Chinese immigrants was his series of fictional letters entitled "Goldsmith's Friend Abroad Again," which were originally printed in *The Galaxy* during 1870. Ah Song, the emigrating Chinaman, wrote of his adventures to Ching-Foo. Ah Song began, "It is all settled, and I am to leave my oppressed and overburdened native land and cross the sea to that noble realm where all are free and all are equal, and none reviled or abused--America!"³⁴ He told how America admitted all nationalities, and added:

³²Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 20-22.

³³Gibson, op. cit., p. 449.

³⁴Clemens, "Goldsmith's Friend Abroad Again," Representative Selections, op. cit., pp. 98-99.

the construction of military railways in China and India.
 asked Grant to exert such influence. He also asked Grant
 to help build strings in order to get some Chinese soldiers
 students continue their studies in America. Grant
 Churchill spoke in New York City in 1901. Grant's letter
 duction of the speaker was a subject of the Chinese
 Behold America. The people of the American people
 everywhere have seen the Chinese people. They
 a Chinese-looking man. He is a Chinese man. He
 even helping to make Chinese people in the United States
 wants to collect 250,000 dollars. He wants to collect
 America has brought for himself and for all other people
 it was not for me.

Train's most complete compilation of Chinese words
 ment of Chinese literature was his series of Chinese vol-
 ume entitled "Chinese Literature and Language".
 originally printed in the United States in 1901. It
 containing Chinese literature and language.
 At the same time, it is a collection of Chinese
 pressed and published in the United States. It is a
 noble realm where all the Chinese people live and grow.
 revised or changed. It is a collection of Chinese
 all nationalities, and added.

32 Clements, "The Chinese People", pp. 1-10.
 20-22.
 33 Clements, "The Chinese People", pp. 1-10.
 34 Clements, "The Chinese People", pp. 1-10.
 Native Collection, pp. 1-10.

. . . We know that the foreign sufferers she has rescued from oppression and starvation are the most eager of her children to welcome us, because, having suffered themselves, they know what suffering is, and having been generously succored, they long to be generous to other unfortunates and thus show that magnanimity is not wasted upon them.³⁵

Ah Song then rejoiced over his promised American wages, twelve dollars a month, and related how kind his employer was to advance money for his passage. "For a mere form, I have turned over my wife, my boy, and my two daughters to my employer's partner as security for the payment of the ship fare."³⁶ Somewhat disillusioned, Ah Song told of a two dollar fee paid to the American Consul in China. It was extortion, but he understood that Congress was going to legalize it in some future session.³⁷ Ah Song's eyes were really opened aboard ship. He wrote to his friend:

Yesterday our people got to quarrelling among themselves, and the captain turned a volume of hot steam upon a mass of them and scalded eighty or ninety of them more or less severely. Flakes and ribbons of skin came off some of them. There was wild shrieking and struggling while the vapor enveloped the great throng, and so some who were not scalded got trampled upon and hurt. We do not complain, for my employer says this is the usual way of quieting disturbances on board the ship, and that it is done in the cabins among the Americans every day or two.³⁸

When the voyage ended, Ah Song stepped jubilantly down the

³⁵Ibid., p. 99.

³⁶Loc. cit.

³⁷Ibid., p. 100.

³⁸Loc. cit.

... We know that the foreign sufferers are not rescued from oppression and starvation are the most pitiful of her children to welcome us, because, having suffered themselves, they know what suffering is, and having been generously answered, they long to be generous to other unfortunate and thus show that magnanimity is not wasted upon them. 35

Ah Song then rejoiced over his promised American wages, twelve dollars a month, and related how his employer was to advance money for his passage. "For a mere four, I have turned over my wife, my boy, and my two daughters to my employer's partner as security for the payment of the ship fare. 36 Somewhat dissatisfied, Ah Song told of a two dollar fee paid to the American Consul in China. It was extortion, but he understood that Congress was going to legalize it in some future session. 37 Ah Song's eyes were really opened aboard ship. He wrote to his friends:

Yesterday our people got to quarrelling among themselves, and the captain turned a volume of hot steam upon a mass of them and assailed eighty or ninety of them more or less severely. Flashes and ribbons of skin came off some of them. There was wild shrieking and screaming while the vapor enveloped the great throng, and so some who were not assailed got trampled upon and hurt. We do not complain, for my employer says this is the usual way of settling disturbances on board the ship, and that it is done in the cabins among the Americans every day or two. 38

When the voyage ended, Ah Song stepped jubilantly down the

35 Ibid., p. 99.
36 Ibid., p. 100.
37 Ibid., p. 100.
38 Ibid., p. 100.

gangplank, but was kicked by a uniformed man, and told to "look out." He was then struck with a club and again told to "look out."³⁹ A required vaccination was next, and despite the two dollar fee charged to all other people, the Chinese were forced to pay ten dollars. AhSong wrote, "And presently the doctor came and did his work and took my last penny--my ten dollars which were the hard savings of nearly a year and a half of labor and privation."⁴⁰ But Ah Song did not despair. "I reflected that I had one prodigious advantage over paupers in other lands--I was in America. I was in the heaven provided refuge of the oppressed and forsaken!"⁴¹ But Ah Song continued:

Just as that comforting thought passed through my mind, some young men set a fierce dog on me. I tried to defend myself, but could do nothing. I retreated to the recess of a closed doorway, and there the dog had me at his mercy, flying at my throat and face or any part of my body that presented itself. I shrieked for help, but the young men only jeered and laughed. Two men in gray uniforms (policemen is their official title) looked on for a minute and then walked leisurely away. But a man stopped them and brought them back and told them it was a shame to leave me in such distress. Then the two policemen beat off the dog with small clubs, and a comfort it was to be rid of him, though I was just rags and blood from head to foot. The man who brought the policemen asked the young men why they abused me in that way, and they said they didn't want any of his meddling. And

³⁹Loc. cit.

⁴⁰Ibid., p. 101.

⁴¹Ibid., p. 102.

gangplank, but was kicked by a uniformed man, and said to
 "look out." He was then struck with a club and carried into
 to "look out." A requested vaccination was made, and the
 spite the two dollars fee charged to all other people, the
 Chinese were forced to pay ten dollars. Although warned that
 presently the doctor came and did his work and took my last
 penny--my ten dollars which were the hard savings of nearly
 a year and a half of labor and privation. "No," said the doctor
 did not satisfy. "I requested that I had some examination
 advantage over people in other lands--I was in a position
 I was in the heaven provided refuge of the oppressed and
 forsaken." But an angry complaint.

Just as that morning I was passing through a narrow
 street, some young men and a woman, I saw a man
 defend myself, but could do nothing. I witnessed the
 scene of a closed doorway, and there the man and woman
 at his mercy, lying at my feet and hands on my part
 of my body that presented itself. I started for help
 but the young men only laughed and laughed. Two men in
 gray uniforms (police) in their official dress, looking
 on for a minute and then walked leisurely away. But a
 man stopped them and brought them back and told them it
 was a shame to leave me in such distress. Then the two
 policemen bent off the dog with small sticks and a com-
 fort it was to be rid of him, though I was just then and
 blood from head to foot. The man who brought the police
 man asked the young men why they caused me in that way
 and they said they didn't want any of his meddling. And

2900. 011.

0110. 011. 011.

0110. 011. 011.

they said to him:

"This Ching divil comes till Ameriky to take the bread out o' dacent intilligent white men's mouths, and whin they try to defend their rights there's a dale o' fuss made about it."⁴²

Ah Song was then arrested for "disturbing the peace," and as he was savagely thrown into a cell, was told, "Rot there, ye furrin spawn, till ye lairn that there's no room in America for the likes of ye or your nation."⁴³ In few other instances has Twain so strongly attacked racial prejudice.

IV. HEBREWS

Twain's attitude toward the Jewish people has been one of consistent admiration, and has never been prejudiced. He said of the Jewish race, "They are peculiarly and conspicuously the world's intellectual aristocracy."⁴⁴ In 1893 when antagonism was rife between Christians and Jews in Austria, Twain wrote to Twichell:

It is Christian and Jew by the horns--the advantage with the superior man, as usual--the superior man being the Jew every time and in all countries. Land, Joe, what chance would the Christian have in a country where there were 3 Jews to 10 Christians! Oh, not the shade of a shadow of a chance. The difference between the brain of the average Christian and that of the average Jew--certainly in Europe--is about the difference between a tadpole's and an Archbishop's. It's a marvelous race--by

⁴²Ibid., pp. 102-3.

⁴³Ibid., p. 104.

⁴⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 151.

they said to him:

"This Chinaman comes from America to take the bread out of decent intelligent white men's mouths, and when they try to defend their rights there's a damn fuss made about it."¹²

Mr. Gung was then arrested for "disturbing the peace," and he was savagely thrown into a cell, was told, "Get there, you turpin spawn, till ye learn that there's no room in America for the likes of ye or your nation."¹³ In few other instances has Twain so strongly attacked racial prejudice.

IV. HERBES

Twain's attitude toward the Jewish people has been one of consistent admiration, and has never been prejudiced. He said of the Jewish race, "They are peculiarly and conspicuously the world's intellectual aristocracy."¹⁴ In 1893 when antagonism was rife between Christians and Jews in Austria, Twain wrote to Twichell:

It is Christian and Jew by the horns--the advantage with the superior man, as usual--the superior man being the Jew every time and in all countries. Land, Joe, what chance would the Christian have in a country where there were 3 Jews to 10 Christians! Oh, not the shade of a shadow of a chance. The difference between the brain of the average Christian and that of the average Jew--certainly in Europe--is about the difference between a pole and an Archbishop. It's a marvelous race--by

¹²Ibid., pp. 102-3.

¹³Ibid., p. 104.

¹⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 151.

long odds the most marvelous that the world has produced, I suppose.⁴⁵

Twain's most important praise of the Hebrews, "Concerning the Jews," was a surprisingly frank discussion of the problems which beset Jewish people in modern Christian countries. Twain first listed the good Jewish traits: the Jews are peaceful industrious, quiet, and not quarrelsome. Their dwellings are truly homes in the finest sense, and they possess a benevolent disposition.⁴⁶ Then Twain put forth the discreditable side of the Jewish people. They have a reputation for petty cheating and the practice of oppressive usury. They will also violate the spirit of a law, although technically they will not break it. While they are faithful civil servants, the Jewish people are often unpatriotic in defense of a flag.⁴⁷ Twain then concluded, "The merits and demerits being fairly weighed and measured on both sides, the Christian can claim no superiority over the Jews in the matter of good citizenship."⁴⁸ Pointing out the superiority of the Hebrews in all fields, Twain said:

If he entered upon a mechanical trade, the Christian had to retire from it. If he set up as a doctor, he was the best one, and he took the business. If he exploited

⁴⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 647.

⁴⁶Samuel L. Clemens, "Concerning the Jews," Literary Essays (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1918), p. 266.

⁴⁷Ibid., p. 269.

⁴⁸Ibid., p. 270.

long after the most marvelous that the world has ever
known, I suppose.

Twain's most important analysis of the Hebrews is in

concerning the Jews, "was a surprisingly frank discussion of the

problems which beset Jewish people in modern Christian

countries. Twain first listed the good Jewish qualities: the

Jews are practical, industrious, quiet, and not quarrelsome.

Their dwellings are truly homes in the finest sense, and they

possess a benevolent disposition. Twain then pointed out

the disadvantageous side of the Jewish people. They have a

reputation for petty cheating and the exercise of oppressive

power. They will also violate the rights of a less efficient

technically they will not break it. While they are

civil servants, the Jewish people are often unscrupulous in

defense of a liar. Twain then concluded, "The Jewish race

demerits being fairly weighed and measured on both sides,

the Christian can claim no superiority over the Jew in the

matter of good citizenship. Pointing out the superiority

of the Hebrews in all fields, Twain said:

If he entered upon a mechanical trade, the Christian will
to retire from it. If he set up as a doctor, he would
beat one, and he took the business. If he engaged

⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, vol. III, p. 447.

⁵Samuel L. Clemens, "Concerning the Jews," *Library*
Bazys (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907), p.
200.

⁶Ibid., p. 209.

⁷Ibid., p. 270.

agriculture, the other farmers had to get at something else. Since there was no way to successfully compete with him in any vocation, the law had to step in and save the Christian from the poorhouse.⁴⁹

Despite almost universal antagonism, the Jews still found ways to get rich. "Ages of restriction to the one tool which the law was not able to take from him--his brain--have made that tool singularly competent. . . ." ⁵⁰ This led Twain to believe that hostility toward the Jew has developed because of the Christian's inability to compete successfully with the Jew in any form of business.⁵¹ Despite this financial success, the Jewish people have never been politically important in any country. Twain thought this situation could be improved if the Jews banded together. He advised the Jewish people to form their own regiments in time of war, and to combine politically in order to control the deciding vote. In these ways they would gradually become more powerful and therefore less oppressed.⁵² Twain then considered the question of whether persecution of the Jews would ever cease, and he affirmed that religious persecution had already ended, but business persecution would

⁴⁹Ibid., p. 273.

⁵⁰Ibid., pp. 273-74.

⁵¹Ibid., pp. 275-76.

⁵²Ibid., pp. 278-82.

agriculture, the other farmers had to get at something else. Since there was no way to successfully compete with him in any vocation, the law had to step in and save the Christian from the poorhouse.⁷⁹

Despite almost universal antagonism, the Jews still found

ways to get rich. "Ages of restriction to the one tool

which the law was not able to take from him--his brain--

have made that tool singularly competent. . . .⁸⁰ This

led Twain to believe that hostility toward the Jew has

developed because of the Christian's inability to compete

successfully with the Jew in any form of business.⁸¹ He

spite this financial success, the Jewish people have never

been politically important in any country. Twain thought

this situation could be improved if the Jews banded to-

gether. He advised the Jewish people to form their own

regiments in time of war, and to combine politically in order

to control the deciding vote. In these ways they would grad-

ually become more powerful and therefore less oppressed.⁸²

Twain then considered the question of whether persecution of

the Jews would ever cease, and he affirmed that religious

persecution had already ended, but business persecution would

⁷⁹Ibid., p. 273.

⁸⁰Ibid., pp. 273-74.

⁸¹Ibid., pp. 275-76.

⁸²Ibid., pp. 278-82.

probably continue for some time.⁵³ Near the end of his sketch he hinted why he had spoken so favorably of the Jew: "He has made a marvelous fight in this world, in all the ages; and has done it with his hands tied behind him."⁵⁴ Once again it was an instance where Twain supported the oppressed underdog, and since this underdog was courageously fighting for itself, Twain was even more strongly impressed.

V. NEGROES

One of the minority groups which Twain consistently defended was the Negroes. Upon no occasion was his attitude toward the Negro race anything but exemplary. His personal relations with Negroes were always pleasant. Brought up in a slave-holding locality, Twain naturally adopted many of the attitudes of his environment, but never did feel cockily superior to the Negro. Twain tells of his youthful summers on Uncle John Quarles' farm:

All the negroes were friends of ours, and with those of our own age we were in effect comrades. I say in effect, using the phrase as a modification. We were comrades, and yet not comrades; color and condition interposed a subtle line which both parties were conscious of and which rendered complete fusion impossible. . . . It was on the farm that I got my strong liking for his race and my appreciation of certain of its fine qualities.

⁵³Ibid., p. 284.

⁵⁴Ibid., p. 286.

probably sometime in the past. He was not
sketchy he didn't say he had spoken to someone at the bar.
"He has made a statement about this matter. He has
said; and that doesn't mean he has been lying.
Once again it was an interview which I have reported on.
I pressed nothing, and I was fair in what I wrote.
fighting for Israel, I was not with him in any way."

THE
BOMB
IN
one of the things which I have written about
defended the fact that I was not with him in any way.
toward the fact that I was not with him in any way.
relations with the fact that I was not with him in any way.
a slave-holding society. I was not with him in any way.
attitudes of his society. I was not with him in any way.
superior to the world. I was not with him in any way.
on the fact that I was not with him in any way.

All the things which I have written about
of one and the same thing. I was not with him in any way.
fact, and I was not with him in any way.
radio, and I was not with him in any way.
gates a building which I was not with him in any way.
and which I was not with him in any way.
was on the fact that I was not with him in any way.
and at the same time I was not with him in any way.

FILED
JUL 10 1964
FBI - NEW YORK

This feeling and this estimate have stood the test of sixty years and more, and have suffered no impairment. The black face is as welcome to me now as it was then.⁵⁵

When Twain first traveled east as a young boy, he was homesick for several things, including the sight of ". . . a good old-fashioned negro."⁵⁶ Twain had several Negro servants in his later years, and always treated them well. Howells has reported that Twain never used a commanding tone to George, for many years the family butler.⁵⁷ Many times after refusing to speak elsewhere, Twain would accept an invitation to speak at a Negro church,⁵⁸ and he financed the college educations of two Negroes. One was in a southern divinity school; the other was in the Yale Law School.⁵⁹ When Garfield was elected, Twain requested that he retain Fred Douglass as Marshall of the District of Columbia. He believed Douglass was a good man, and should not be made the victim of politics.⁶⁰ Twain also spoke in praise of Booker T. Washing-

100. ⁵⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I,

⁵⁶Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 29.

⁵⁷Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 34.

⁵⁸Paine, op. cit., II, 700.

⁵⁹Ibid., II, 701.

⁶⁰Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 393-94.

This feeling and this estimate have stood the test of
sixty years and more, and have suffered no impairment.
The black race is as welcome to me now as it was then.
When Twain first traveled east as a young boy, he was
sick for several things, including the sight of "old-
fashioned negroes."⁵⁶ Twain had several Negro servants in
his later years, and always treated them well. Howells has
reported that Twain never used a commanding tone to Colored,
for many years the family butler.⁵⁷ Many times after re-
fusing to speak elsewhere, Twain would accept an invitation
to speak at a Negro church,⁵⁸ and he financed the educa-
tions of two Negroes. One was in a southern ministry
school; the other was in the Yale Law School.⁵⁹ When Gar-
field was elected, Twain requested that he retain Fred Doug-
lass as Marshall of the District of Columbia. He believed
Douglass was a good man, and should not be made the victim of
politics.⁶⁰ Twain also spoke in praise of Booker T. Wash-
ington.

⁵⁶Clemens, *Mark Twain's Autobiography*, pp. 211, 1.

100.

⁵⁷Clemens, *Mark Twain's Letters*, pp. 212, 1, 22.

⁵⁸Howells, *My Mark Twain*, pp. 211, p. 34.

⁵⁹Patne, pp. 211, 11, 700.

⁶⁰ibid., 11, 701.

⁶¹Clemens, *Mark Twain's Letters*, pp. 211, 1, 393-94.

ton, and ardently supported Washington's Negro welfare work.⁶¹ Twain had a habit of losing his temper over many poorly-written letters, but never did so if he knew the letter was from a Negro. This habit of Twain's resulted in Olivia's admonition that he considered every man colored until he was proved white.⁶²

William Lyon Phelps has said, "Mark Twain is the most truthful and the most reliable of all novelists who have dealt with American slavery."⁶³ In his boyhood years, Twain was taught to believe that slavery was necessary and not morally wrong--at least not the type of slavery seen in Missouri. Abolitionists were something to be despised or perhaps stoned out of town.⁶⁴ From his earliest years, however, Twain hated to see slaves treated cruelly:

When I was ten years old I saw a man fling a lump of iron-ore at a slave-man in anger, for merely doing something awkwardly--as if that were a crime. It bounded from the man's skull, and the man fell and never spoke again. He was dead in an hour. I know the man had a right to kill his slave if he wanted to, and yet it seemed a pitiful thing and somehow wrong, though why wrong I was not deep enough to explain if I had been asked to do it. Nobody in the village approved of that murder, but of course no one said much about it.⁶⁵

⁶¹Paine, op. cit., III, 1272.

⁶²Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 170.

⁶³Phelps, Some Makers of American Literature, op. cit., p. 181.

⁶⁴Paine, op. cit., I, 42.

⁶⁵Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., II, 18-19.

Twain also hated the sight of chained Negroes awaiting shipment "down the river" to southern plantations.⁶⁶

The power of Twain's environment was probably still too strong in the years immediately before the Civil War for him to take an anti-slavery stand. In his later years, after slavery in the United States had been abolished, he often condemned slavery. He once said, "It would not be possible for a humane and intelligent person to invent a rational excuse for slavery. . . ."⁶⁷ William Cairns believed that Twain's opposition to slavery was not only because of his humanitarianism, but also because slavery hindered the booming industrial progress that Twain so ardently liked.⁶⁸ Twain may well have believed slavery hampered industrial progress, but that feeling did not lessen his defence of the Negroes on moral grounds. He spoke out sharply against the practice of lynching, and also criticized the planters' attitudes toward the free Negroes. If Negroes were to be lynched for supposed crimes, Twain believed they would soon become mentally upset and actually begin committing these crimes.⁶⁹ In Life on the Mississippi he told how the planters

⁶⁶Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 124.

⁶⁷Clemens, "My First Lie, and How I Got Out of It," The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories, op. cit., p. 161.

⁶⁸Cairns, op. cit., p. 446.

⁶⁹Clemens, "The United States of Lyncherdom," The Portable Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 586.

Twain also hated the sight of chained Negroes awaiting shipment "down the river" to southern plantations.⁶⁶

The power of Twain's environment was probably still

too strong in the years immediately before the Civil War for him to take an anti-slavery stand. In his later years, after slavery in the United States had been abolished, he often condemned slavery. He once said, "It would not be possible

for a humane and intelligent person to invent a rational excuse for slavery. . . .⁶⁷ William Cairns believed that

Twain's opposition to slavery was not only because of his humanitarianism, but also because slavery hindered the boom in industrial progress that Twain so ardently liked.⁶⁸

Twain may well have believed slavery hampered industrial progress, but that feeling did not lessen his dislike of the Negroes on moral grounds. He spoke out sharply against the practice of lynching, and also criticized the planters' attitudes toward the free Negroes. If Negroes were to be lynched for supposed crimes, Twain believed they would soon

become mentally upset and actually begin committing these crimes.⁶⁹ In Life on the Mississippi he told how the planters

⁶⁶Clements, Mark Twain's Autobiography, pp. 211, 212.

⁶⁷Clements, "My First Life, and How I Got Out of It," The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories, pp. 211, 212.

⁶⁸Cairns, pp. 211, 212.

⁶⁹Clements, "The United States of Lyncherdom," Portable Mark Twain, pp. 211, 212.

refused to associate with the free Negroes. Strange Jewish merchants moved in, talked the Negroes into obtaining excessive credit, and soon had the Negroes pauperized. Twain did not attack the Jewish merchants, but did censure the planters who allowed these conditions to occur under their own noses.⁷⁰

In many of his other books Twain either defended the Negro or opposed slavery. In A Connecticut Yankee he commented on the degrading effects of slavery upon the human race,⁷¹ and in Tom Sawyer Abroad he defended the Negro. Huck said of the Negro Jim, "He was only nigger outside; inside he was as white as you be."⁷² The Gilded Age also had several passages in defense of the Negro. Twain, in his description of the steamboat race, showed that many people considered Negroes less than human. When one of the steamboats had attained a terrific head of steam, the following conversation ensued:

"How is she now?"

"A hundred and ninety-six and still a-swelling!--water below the middle gauge-cocks!--carrying every pound she can stand!--nigger roosting on the safety valve!"⁷³

⁷⁰Clemens, Life on the Mississippi, op. cit., p. 157.

⁷¹Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 750.

⁷²Clemens, Tom Sawyer, Abroad, op. cit., p. 102.

⁷³Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., I, 34.

refused to associate with the free Negroes. The Negroes
merchants stayed in, called the Negroes into their
cessive credit, and soon had the Negroes possessed. They
did not attack the Jewish merchants, but did condemn the
planters who allowed these conditions to occur under their
own noses. 70

In many of his other books Taine either defended the
Negro or opposed slavery. In a Connecticut Yankee he con-
mended on the degrading effects of slavery upon the human
race, 71 and in *Le roman expérimental* he defended the Negro. 72
said of the Negro film, "He was only a negro outside inside
he was as white as you are." 73 The film had also had
eval passages in defense of the Negro. Taine, in his de-
scription of the steamboat race, showed that many people
considered Negroes less than human. When one of the steam-
boats had attained a terrific head of steam, the following
conversation ensued:

"How is she now?"

"A hundred and ninety-six and still a-coming! --
water below the middle range-coming! -- carrying every
pound she can stand! -- bigger booming on the water
velvet! 74

70 *Clemens, Life on the Mississippi*, ch. xlii, p. 174.
71 *Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's
Court*, ch. xlii, p. 770.
72 *Clemens, The American*, ch. xlii, p. 103.
73 *Clemens and Warner, The Blithedale*, ch. xlii, p. 103.

On another occasion Ruth Bolton and her girl friend sneaked into the dissecting room of the medical school one night and discovered a dead Negro on a table. Twain's comment was highly effective:

Perhaps it was the wavering light of the candles, perhaps it was only the agony from a death of pain, but the repulsive black face seemed to wear a scowl that said, "Haven't you yet done with the outcast, persecuted black man, but you must now haul him from his grave, and send even your women to dismember his body?"⁷⁴

Twain's best literary treatments of the Negro came in Pudd'nhead Wilson and Huckleberry Finn. Ferguson said of Pudd'nhead Wilson:

The truly original element in the story Mark Twain seemingly overlooked. It had come naturally to him, as part of his inheritance from slavery days in Missouri, and he presented it simply, without heat or underscoring. The moral overhead of slavery, by which slave women became their masters' concubines and bore them slave children, was a dangerously realistic theme to handle in the still prudish closing years of the Victorian age. But simply because he handled it without heat, as a fact of nature, Mark Twain got away with it.⁷⁵

Twain alluded to the cruel custom which caused a person with a tiny fraction of Negro blood to be considered colored, and forced that person to remain a slave.⁷⁶ He also pointed out that although many Negroes were often punished severely for stealing chickens, no Negroes could ever protest against the

⁷⁴Ibid., I, 153.

⁷⁵Ferguson, op. cit., p. 253.

⁷⁶Samuel L. Clemens, Pudd'nhead Wilson, and Those Extraordinary Twins (New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1922), p. 12.

On another occasion Ruth Bolton and her girl friend rushed into the dissecting room of the medical school one night and discovered a dead Negro on a table. Twain's comment was highly effective:

Perhaps it was the wavering light of the candles, perhaps it was only the agony from a death of pain, but the repulsive black face seemed to wear a sad and silent smile. "Haven't you yet done with the autopsy, persecuted black man, but you must now hand him from his grave, and send even your women to dismember his body?"

Twain's best literary treatment of the Negro came in Pudd'nhead Wilson and Huckleberry Finn. Ferguson said in Pudd'nhead Wilson:

The truly original element in the story Mark Twain seemingly overlooked. It had come naturally to him, as part of his inheritance from slavery days in Missouri, and he presented it simply, without heat or understatement. The moral overtones of slavery, by which slave women became their masters' concubines and bore their slave children, was a dangerously realistic theme to handle in the still prudish closing years of the Victorian age. But simply because he handled it without hesitancy as a fact of nature, Mark Twain got away with it.

Twain alluded to the cruel custom which caused a person with a tiny fraction of Negro blood to be considered colored, and forced that person to remain a slave. He also pointed out that although many Negroes were often punished severely for stealing chickens, no Negroes could ever protest against the

Pudd'nhead Wilson, I, 173.
 Ferguson, op. cit., p. 253.
 Samuel L. Clemens, Pudd'nhead Wilson and Huckleberry Finn (New York: F. P. Collier and Son Company, 1922), p. 12.

whites who stole their liberty.⁷⁷ The most tragic point presented by Twain, however, was the description of the tremendous power which racial intolerance could exert over a person's character. Tom Driscoll's prejudices against Negroes were so strong that when he discovered he was actually colored, his entire attitude changed from haughtiness to utter abjectness.⁷⁸ To complete the illustration, Twain showed the effect on Chambers, the supposed Negro who discovered himself to be white. He had been a slave for so many years that it was almost impossible for him to have anything but a hang-dog demeanor in the presence of other whites.⁷⁹

One of the important aspects of Huckleberry Finn is its handling of the Negro question. Set in pre-war slave country, the book presents a great many of the attitudes toward the Negro held by the people of the Mississippi Valley. Although these attitudes existed in slave-holding times, they still are of importance because of the many similar prejudices held by Americans throughout the country today. Huck's father took a common attitude, still seen in modified

⁷⁷Ibid., p. 16.

⁷⁸Ibid., pp. 76-79.

⁷⁹Ibid., p. 202.

whitening and a great light. The...
presented by...
nonsense...
person's...
those were so strong...
colored, his entire...
utter...
saw...
covered...
many years...
something...
whites.

one of the...
the...
country...
...
...
...
...
...
...
...

...
...
...

form today, when he refused to vote ever again because in some states Negroes were allowed to vote.⁸⁰ Huck and Mrs. Phelps showed a typical attitude when she asked about the supposed steamboat wreck:

"Good Gracious! anybody hurt?"

"No'm. Killed a nigger."

"Well, it's lucky; because sometimes people do get hurt."⁸¹

Another example of a typical attitude toward the Negro was Huck's horror when Tom Sawyer offered to help rescue Jim. Huck had not thought Tom would ever stoop to "nigger-stealing."⁸² When Jim was captured, Mr. Phelps would pray for him, but would not help him.⁸³ This attitude has also existed in various forms through the years. The greed of the white man was shown later when the planters were prevented from hanging the captured Jim only because of his monetary value.⁸⁴ On several other occasions the cruel practices used on slaves were shown in all their barbarousness.

Theodore Dreiser has said that Twain's greatest deed

⁸⁰Samuel L. Clemens, The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1931), pp. 37-38.

⁸¹Ibid., pp. 306-7.

⁸²Ibid., pp. 313-14.

⁸³Ibid., p. 344.

⁸⁴Ibid., pp. 393-94.

for the Negro was to oppose Harriet Beecher Stowe's portrait of the colored race with his own picture of Jim.⁸⁵ Twain did manage to exhibit many Negro characteristics as he had known them. Jim's nobility was shown when he willingly gave himself up in order that Tom Sawyer might be given proper medical attention.⁸⁶ Huck first began to appreciate the human qualities in Jim when he realized how hurt the colored man had been at his thoughtless pranks.⁸⁷ Huck showed the typical prejudice of his time when he almost froze in horror at Jim's claim that if necessary he would one day steal his children from their master.⁸⁸ White prejudice was contrasted, a bit later, with Jim's inner feelings when Huck said:

When I waked up just at daybreak he was sitting there with his head down betwixt his knees, moaning and mourning to himself. I didn't take notice nor let on. I knowed what it was about. He was thinking about his wife and his children, away up yonder, and he was low and homesick; because he hadn't ever been away from home before in his life; and I do believe he cared just as much for his people as white folks does for their'n.⁸⁹

Huck probably showed more moral courage than Twain ever did, because his plan to help Jim escape was in direct opposition to sentiment along the Mississippi River. Critics

⁸⁵Dreiser, op. cit., p. 622.

⁸⁶Clemens, Huckleberry Finn, op. cit., p. 381.

⁸⁷Ibid., pp. 119-20.

⁸⁸Ibid., p. 123.

⁸⁹Ibid., p. 215.

have cast aspersions upon Twain because his defense of the Negro was "after-the-fact"; slavery was a thing of the past when he showed the cruelties of the system. This accusation is true, but it should be recalled that prejudices were not swept away by the Emancipation Proclamation, and in his works Twain has described many of the problems which have beset the Negro because of racial prejudice.

VI. LABORERS AND THE POOR

Although the laborers and the poor in America far outnumbered the wealthy people during Twain's lifetime, this group can be listed under "minorities." Despite the numerical advantage of the laborers, power was in the hands of the big businessmen, and for many years public opinion was distrustful of labor's attempts to organize. Mark Twain stated that he favored the workingman's attempts to alleviate his estate, but a look at the record finds him silent more often than not.

On at least two occasions Twain was unfavorable to labor. In The American Claimant he sent the Earl's son to find a job in America. Taken to a labor union, the young man was rudely told to get out. The once humble laborers had become haughtily resentful of any non-union man, and refused to admit "anybody" to their organization.⁹⁰ Twain

⁹⁰Clemens, The American Claimant, op. cit., p. 111.

have cast aspersions upon Twain because his definition of the Negro was "after-the-fact"; slavery was a thing of the past when he showed the operation of the system. This accusation is true, but it should be recalled that prejudiced views were not swept away by the Emancipation Proclamation, and in this work Twain has described many of the problems which have beset the Negro because of racial prejudice.

VI. LABORER AND THE POOR

Although the laborer and the poor in America are outnumbered the wealthy people during Twain's lifetime, this group can be listed under "minorities." Granted the unequal advantage of the laborer, power was in the hands of the big businessmen, and for many years public opinion was distrustful of labor's attempts to organize. Mark Twain stated that he favored the workman's attempts to alleviate his estate, but a look at the record finds him silent more often than not.

On at least two occasions Twain was unfavorable to labor. In *The American Claimant* he sent the Earl's son to find a job in America. Taken to a labor union, the young man was rudely told to get out. The once humble laborer had become haughtily resistant of any non-union man, and refused to admit "anybody" to their organization.⁹⁰ Twain

⁹⁰Clemens, *The American Claimant*, no. cit., p. 111.

also told Howells he was doubtful of the justice of the workingmen's cause in the great Pennsylvania coal strike.⁹¹

On other occasions Twain took an almost flippant attitude toward the plight of laborers and the poor. When Twain visited Bermuda ". . . the question came up, Where do the poor live? No answer was arrived at. Therefore, we agreed to leave this conundrum for future statesmen to wrangle over."⁹² On another occasion when Twain was at a party in Europe, he spoke jocosely of his agreement with a lady's opinions: ". . . She is a democrat and so am I; she is women's rights and so am I; she is laborers' rights and approves trades unions and strikes, and that is me. And so on."⁹³

There were times, however, when Twain did seriously side with laborers and the poor. He once wrote in his notebook, "I wish the Lord would disguise Himself in citizen's clothing and make a personal examination of the sufferings of the poor in London. He would be moved, and would do something for them Himself."⁹⁴ Many parts of the Connecticut

⁹¹Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 81.

⁹²Clemens, "Some Rambling Notes of an Idle Excursion," Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective, and Other Stories, op. cit., p. 276.

⁹³Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 680.

⁹⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., p. 324.

Yankee also describe the sufferings of the poor. Twain was always willing to atone for any hasty action on his own part if a poor man were affected. He sued a cab driver who overcharged his servant Katy Leary, but when he discovered graft in the company and learned that the driver was a mere pawn, he quietly had the man's license restored. On another occasion he intended to report a surly railroad brakeman but stopped when he remembered the man earned only twenty dollars a month.⁹⁵ When the Knights of Labor were organizing, Twain wrote a paper approving of their efforts.⁹⁶ Howells thought it excellent, but it never seems to have been published. The essay closed:

He (the unionized workman) is here and he will remain. He is the greatest birth of the greatest age the nations of the world have known. You cannot sneer at him--that time has gone by. He has before him the most righteous work that was ever given into the hand of man to do; and he will do it. Yes, he is here; and the question is not --as it has been heretofore during a thousand ages-- What shall we do with him? For the first time in history we are relieved of the necessity of managing his affairs for him. He is not a broken dam this time--he is the Flood!⁹⁷

Twain also championed the workingman when he told, with considerable satisfaction, how the laborer was sovereign in Australia. He said the parliament existed for the working

⁹⁵Howells, My Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 43.

⁹⁶Ferguson, op. cit., p. 238.

⁹⁷Paine, op. cit., II, 849.

Yankee also describes the sufferings of the poor. Twain was always willing to stoop for any nasty action on his own part. If a poor man were affected. He used a cab driver who over-charged his servant Katy Lorry, but when he discovered this in the company and learned that the driver was a mere party, he quietly had the man's license restored. On another occasion he intended to report a surly railroad brakeman but stopped when he remembered the man earned only twenty dollars a month.⁹⁵ When the Knights of Labor were organizing, Twain wrote a paper approving of their efforts.⁹⁶ Howells thought it excellent, but it never seems to have been published. The essay closed:

He (the unionized workman) is here and he will remain. He is the greatest birth of the greatest age the nation of the world have known. You cannot sneer at him--that time has gone by. He has before him the most righteous work that was ever given into the hand of man to do; and he will do it. Yes, he is here; and the question is not--as it has been heretofore during a thousand ages--that shall we do with him? For the first time in history we are relieved of the necessity of managing his affairs for him. He is not a broken dam this time--he is the Flood!⁹⁷

Twain also championed the workman when he told, with considerable satisfaction, how the laborer was sovereign in Australia. He said the parliament existed for the workman.

⁹⁵Howells, *My Mark Twain*, pp. 211, 212, 213.
⁹⁶Forster, pp. 211, 212.
⁹⁷Twain, pp. 211, 212.

man, and the country was a veritable paradise for the laborer. Twain concluded his statement about the workingman, "He has had a hard time in this world, and has earned a paradise. I am glad he has found it."⁹⁸

A final pro-labor attitude of Twain's was not hard to explain. In Life on the Mississippi he devoted a chapter to the Pilot's Benevolent Association, an organization which increased wages and provided unemployment benefits, pensions, funeral expenses, and insurance for the Mississippi riverboat pilots. The Association remained all-powerful until the Civil War and the development of the railroad made steamboating a thing of the past. It should be noted that this organization was not for common laborers, but was created to make the already proud profession of piloting even more monopolistic than before. Twain championed it not because it helped the condition of the poor man, but because it made a perfect monopoly in his old profession.

But even more often than he championed labor, Twain remained silent about labor problems. For many years after the Civil War, large corporations controlled the country, and there was much agitation by the "little" people:

When state legislatures and the Congress, besieged by burdened workers and farmers, agreed to rectify the egregiously bad practices of the corporations, the

⁹⁸Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., I, 171.

man, and the country was a very early partner for the
porter. Twain concluded his statement about the woman
"He has had a hard time in this world, and has earned a
paradise. I am afraid he has earned it."

A final pre-labor statement of Twain's was not made
to explain. While on the Mississippi he devoted a chapter
to the River's Benevolent Association, an organization which
increased wages and provided unemployment benefits, covering
internal expenses, and insurance for the Mississippi River
boat pilots. The association remained all-potential until
the Civil War and the development of the railroad made
steaming a thing of the past. It should be noted that
this organization was not for labor. It was not even
ated to make the already poor boatmen of the river even
more well-to-do than before. Twain pointed out that the
cause it helped the condition of the poor was not because
it made a perfect monopoly in the old profession.

But even more often than he mentioned labor, Twain
remained silent about labor problems. For many years after
the Civil War, large corporations controlled the country,
and there was much agitation by the "little" people.

When state legislatures and the Congress, beset by
business workers and farmers, agreed to restrict the
extrajudicial practices of the corporations, the

courts refused to budge from the letter of the law. They declared unconstitutional acts to shorten the hours of labor or to protect workmen against obvious hazards--insisting that these laws deprived individuals of their inalienable right to work where and when they pleased. By the same reasoning they granted injunctions to employers in labor disputes and sanctioned the use of thugs to break up strikes.⁹⁹

Mark Twain, however, never said anything about troubles like these, nor did he say anything about the great Haymarket Riot in Chicago, May 4, 1886:

The vent shook the entire nation, and with a vehemence that tore at its social roots. The arbitrary procedure of the police and the hysterical incitement of press and pulpit stung the conscience of those Americans who believed in democracy and feared capitalistic monopoly. William Dean Howells, Henry Demarest Lloyd, and scores of other liberals spoke out repeatedly, and with exemplary courage, for the acquittal of the condemned anarchists.¹⁰⁰

The contrast between the opulent rich and the oppressed poor was brought out by Twain in the Connecticut Yankee:

Presently there was a distant blare of military music; it came nearer, still nearer, and soon a noble cavalcade wound into view, glorious with plumed helmets and flashing mail and flaunting banners and rich doublets and horse-cloths and gilded spearheads; and through the muck and swine, and naked brats, and joyous dogs, and shabby huts, it took its gallant way. . . .¹⁰¹

But Twain never wrote about that difference in standards of living, almost as great, between the modern robber barons and

⁹⁹Madison, op. cit., pp. 534-35.

¹⁰⁰Ibid., p. 169.

¹⁰¹Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 662.

courts refused to order from the letter of the law. They desired constitutional order to govern the law of labor or to protect workers against arbitrary orders. Insisting that these laws deprived individuals of their inalienable right to work where and when they pleased. By the same reasoning they granted injunctions to employers in labor disputes and annulled the use of force to break up strikes.

Mark Twain, however, never said anything about "capitalism" those, nor did he say anything about the "great American" in Chicago, May 4, 1886.

The year about the entire nation and with a vengeance that force at its social roots. The arbitrary procedure of the police and the systematic indictment of innocent people seem the conscience of those Americans who live in democracy and feared capitalist monopoly. William Dean Howells, Henry Brewster Lloyd, and scores of other literate spoke out repeatedly, and with every play comment, for the annihilation of the condemned anarchists.

The contrast between the opulent rich and the oppressed

poor was brought out by Twain in his "Conquest of Yankee"

Presently there was a distant view of military march: a line of soldiers, and a noble cavalryman wound into view, followed by a plumed helmet and a shining mail and flashing banner and rich doublets and hose. Others and gilded spearmen; and through the ranks and swine, and named boys, and jockey boys, and other things it took its gallant way.

But Twain never wrote about that difference in standards of

living, almost as great, between the modern robber baron and

Madison, op. cit., pp. 33-35.

1001bid., p. 189.

101Clemens, a Conquest of Yankee in King Arthur's Court op. cit., p. 662.

the immigrant laborers. Lewis Mumford pointed out:

Mark Twain had an eye for the wretchedness of the peasant's hovel: but apparently he had never walked half a mile eastward from his Fifth Avenue residence to contemplate the black squalor of the new immigrant workers.¹⁰²

Twain had criticized the poor working conditions of the Negro slave, but he never wrote about the thousands of sweatshop employees. Wagenknecht came close to the root of the matter when he remarked, "He hated the sufferings, the injustices, the inequalities that capitalism produces, but he never went so far as to doubt the capitalistic view of society as such."¹⁰³ In addition labor disputes were unpopular during the nineteenth century, and Twain would have been jeopardizing his financial position by championing labor. These are the principal reasons why Twain's attitude toward labor was often one of conscious aloofness. Whenever he sympathized with the poor, he did so usually because a case of individual suffering came to his attention. He despised the human race at large, but hated to see individuals suffer.

Thus we have seen that Twain took different attitudes toward different minority groups, but for the most part

¹⁰²Mumford, The Golden Day, op. cit., p. 172.

¹⁰³Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 259.

the immigrant laborers. Lewis Mumford pointed out:

Mark Twain had an eye for the wretchedness of the
 peasant's novel; but apparently he had never walked
 half a mile eastward from his Fifth Avenue residence
 to contemplate the black swarms of the new immigrant
 workers.¹⁰²

Twain had criticized the poor working conditions of the

Negro slave, but he never wrote about the thousands of

sweatshop employees. Wagenknecht came close to the root of

the matter when he remarked, "He hated the sufferings, the

injustices, the inequalities that capitalism produced, but

he never went so far as to doubt the capitalistic view of

society as such."¹⁰³ In addition labor disputes were un-

popular during the nineteenth century, and Twain would have

been jeopardizing his financial position by championing

labor. These are the principal reasons why Twain's attitude

toward labor was often one of conscious aloofness. Whenever

he sympathized with the poor, he did so usually because a

case of individual suffering came to his attention. He

despised the human race at large, but hated to see individ-

uals suffer.

Thus we have seen that Twain took different attitudes

toward different minority groups, but for the most part

¹⁰²Mumford, *The Golden Day*, op. cit., p. 172.

¹⁰³Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 259.

championed the little groups of oppressed people. Those groups which he ignored or did not favor had either drawn Twain's dislike or else were too unpopular to risk defending. Twain actually had almost no race prejudice:

I am quite sure that (for one) I have no race prejudices, and I think I have no color prejudices nor caste prejudices nor creed prejudices. Indeed, I know it. I can stand any society. All that I care to know is that a man is a human being--that is enough for me; he can't be any worse.¹⁰⁴

¹⁰⁴Clemens, "Concerning the Jews," Literary Essays, op. cit., p. 264. The one exception to Twain's statement was the French, whom he always despised.

championed the little group of outcasts, the
groups which he gathered up, the little groups
Twain's dislike of them was the cause of his
ine. Twain actually had a dislike for them.

I am quite sure that (and I am sure) I am sure
and I think I have no other explanation for it
which is not based on a dislike of the
stand any society. I am sure I am sure
man is a human being--that is, a man who is
be any worse, 104

104. Twain, "The American Note,"
on. 111, p. 104. The one exception to
was the French, who he always despised.

CHAPTER VII

POLITICS AND CORRUPTION

During much of Twain's lifetime the political scene in America was characterized by inefficiency and corruption. The Grant administration was one of unusual mismanagement. Jay Gould and Jim Fisk, in trying to retain a corner on gold, created the panic known as the "Black Friday" episode; the Republican party leader, James G. Blaine, was involved in several corrupt schemes; and many of the country's legislators participated in the "salary grab" of 1873. Grant's own associates were connected with scandalous events. Vice President Schuyler Colfax was allied with the Credit Mobilier graft; his private secretary with the St. Louis Whisky Ring; his brother-in-law with Fisk and Gould; and several of his cabinet members with other nefarious schemes. The Tweed Ring cost New York City close to one hundred million dollars; the Philadelphia Gas Ring was almost as brazen; and the reconstructed state governments in the South, the railroads, banks, custom houses, and numerous private corporations were riddled with corruption. Votes were openly bought and sold, and politicians saw eye to eye with the great financiers. Tariffs were raised to protect the great monopolies; cheap immigrant labor was encouraged, and natural resources were wasted.

POLITICS AND CORRUPTION

During much of Twain's lifetime the political scene in America was characterized by inefficiency and corruption. The Grant administration was one of unusual mismanagement. Jay Gould and Jim Fisk, in trying to retain a corner on gold, created the panic known as the "Black Friday" episode; the Republican party leader, James G. Blaine, was involved in several corrupt schemes; and many of the country's leaders participated in the "salary grab" of 1877. Grant's own associates were connected with scandalous events. Vice President Schuyler Colfax was allied with the Credit Mobilier graft; his private secretary with the St. Louis Whisky Ring; his brother-in-law with Fisk and Gould; and several of his cabinet members with other nefarious schemes. The Tweed Ring cost New York City alone one hundred million dollars; the Philadelphia Gas Ring was almost as big; and the reconstructed state governments in the South, the railroads, banks, auction houses, and numerous private corporations were riddled with corruption. Votes were openly bought and sold, and politicians saw eye to eye with the great financiers. Tariffs were raised to protect the great monopolies; cheap immigrant labor was encouraged, and natural resources were wasted.

In the years after Grant's administration, the political scene remained intellectually arid. The era of Hayes, Garfield, Arthur, Cleveland, and Harrison produced campaigns in which real political issues were avoided and personal abuse was carried to extremes. "National politics became little more than a contest for power between rival parties waged on no higher plane than a struggle for traffic between rival railroads."¹ In later years the Populist and Progressive parties arose, as did the muckraking movements. McKinley and Roosevelt fostered imperialism, and the United States became an important world political power.

Truly there was much material upon which Twain could comment. In discussing the Connecticut Constitution in his Connecticut Yankee, he advocated active interest in government:

Under that gospel, the citizen who thinks he sees that the commonwealth's political clothes are worn out, and yet holds his peace and does not agitate for a new suit, is disloyal; he is a traitor. That he may be the only one who thinks he sees this decay, does not excuse him; it is his duty to agitate anyway, and it is the duty of the others to vote him down if they do not see the matter as he does.²

Any avoidance of one's moral duties Twain called the "Silent

¹Morison and Commager, op. cit., II, 214.

²Clemens, A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court, op. cit., p. 709.

In the year 1890, the first
trial was held at the
Court, where, Cleveland, and
in which the defendant was
was carried to prison. The
more than a century for
no higher place than a
road. In later years the
cases, as the the
with the defendant, and the
important work of the

THAT the defendant, who
comment. In the
Connecticut, he
sent

Under that court, the
that the defendant
and yet his name
edit, is that
only one who
him in the
day of the
the matter as

Any avoidance of the

Justice and
of the
of the
of the

Assertion Lie." This was one of man's most common faults, according to Twain, and was keeping the world from progressing as it should. It will be the intent of this chapter to examine Twain's interests in politics, graft, and corruption in order to see whether or not he followed his own advice.

I. ELECTIONS AND EXECUTIVES

Some of the first comments Twain ever made about a specific president of the United States dealt with Andrew Johnson. While serving briefly as a secretary in Washington in 1868, Twain contributed to the Chicago Republican, and in several letters mentioned the impeachment proceedings against Johnson. Twain, who regretted the undignified dispute, said the citizens would welcome a fair stand-up fight, but nobody desired either Johnson or Congress to ". . . descend to scratching and hair pulling. These parties stand for the United States," which ". . . is not a nation that fights in that way."³ Although much of his comment on the vitally important news was sheer burlesque, and at no time did he offer opinions or comments either for or against the impeachment, he did exhibit a characteristic display of personal sympathy for the oppressed president:

³Samuel L. Clemens, "Curious Legislation and Vinnie Ream," The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1942), 10.

Assertion lies. This was one of man's most common faults according to Twain, and was keeping the world from progressing as it should. It will be the intent of this chapter to examine Twain's interests in politics, graft, and corruption in order to see whether or not he followed his own advice.

I. DIRECTIVE AND EXECUTIVE

Some of the first comments Twain ever made about a specific president of the United States dealt with Andrew Johnson. While serving briefly as a secretary in Washington in 1868, Twain contributed to the Chicago Tribune and in several letters mentioned the impeachment proceedings against Johnson. Twain, who regretted the unqualified disaster, said the citizens would welcome a fair stand-up fight, but nobody desired either Johnson or Congress to "descend to scorching and hair pulling. These parties stand for the United States," which "... is not a nation that fights in that way." Although much of his comment on the visibly important news was sheer burlesque, and at no time did he offer opinions or comments either for or against the impeachment, he did exhibit a characteristic display of personal sympathy for the oppressed president:

Samuel L. Clemens, "Clemens Legislation and Twain's Name," The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1942), 10.

I stood at a little distance and watched him receive and dismiss his visitors. He looked so like a plain, simple, goodnatured old farmer, that it was hard to conceive that this was the imperious "tyrant" whose deeds had been stirring the sluggish blood of thirty millions of people.⁴

Twain added, ". . . When he shook hands with a guest he looked wistfully into the person's face, as if he sought a friendly interest there, and yet hardly hoped to find it. . ."⁵ Twain concluded, "I never saw a man who seemed as friendless and forsaken, and I never felt for any man so much."⁶

One of the instances when Mark Twain failed as a social critic was during the Grant administration. He opposed the movement to draft Grant as a third term candidate, but previously had always supported him. Twain's personal liking for Grant evidently blinded him to Grant's unfitness for the presidency. Parrington has remarked:

To millions of Americans Grant was an authentic hero, to Mark Twain he was a very great man, and to Jay Cooke he was a pawn to be used in the noble strategy of fortune-seeking. What a comedy it all seems now--⁷ yet one that leaves an unpleasant taste in the mouth.

Parrington also described Grant and his administration:

⁴Samuel L. Clemens, "The Hunted Chief in His Castle," The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1942), 14.

⁵Loc. cit.

⁶Loc. cit.

⁷Parrington, op. cit., III, 31.

I stood at a little distance and watched him as he
and his visitor. He looked as if he were
singing, and his face was lit up with
conviction that this was the important "turning point"
which had been stirring the sleeping blood of
millions of people.

Twain added, "... When he shook hands with a crowd he
looked wistfully into the person's face, as if he thought a
friendly interest there, and yet hardly hoped to find it.
... Twain concluded, "I never saw a man who seemed so

friendless and forsaken, and I never felt for any man so
much."

One of the instances when Mark Twain's
social critic was during the Grant administration.
opposed the movement to elect Grant as a third term.
distant, but previously had always supported him. Twain's
personal liking for Grant evidently blinded him to Grant's
unfitness for the presidency. Farrington has reported:

To millions of Americans Grant was an heroic hero.
To Mark Twain he was a very great man, and in his
 Cooke he was a power to be used in the noblest way
of fortune-seeking. That a comedy in all its
yet one that leaves an unpleasant taste in the mouth.

Farrington also described Grant and his administration.

Samuel L. Clemens, The United States, The Atlantic
The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1902), 11.

218. cit.

218. cit.

Farrington, op. cit., III, 31.

His eight years in the White House marked the lowest depths--in domestic affairs at least--to which any American administration has fallen. They were little better than a national disgrace.⁸

It is true that in The Gilded Age Twain attacked political conditions of this era, but he never seems to have realized that Grant's utter ineffectiveness as an executive helped the corruption reach unbelievable proportions.

Twain's lack of vision can be illustrated by the fact that in 1872 he supported Grant, and opposed Horace Greeley. Many important citizens, disgusted at the bungling and graft under Grant, formed the Liberal Republican party in 1872. Led by Carl Schurz, Charles Francis Adams, Salmon P. Chase, and Greeley, they campaigned for honesty and efficiency in the federal government. The peaceful revolt failed, and Grant, with his military prestige still high, continued in office. The Liberal Republicans, however, had helped uncover the Credit Mobilier scandal, the Salary Grab, the Whisky Ring, and other grafts. But Twain continued to support Grant, and after the election wrote to cartoonist Thomas Nast, who had also opposed Greeley, "Nast, you more than any other man have won a prodigious victory for Grant--I mean, rather for civilization and progress."⁹ This has

⁸Ibid., III, 30.

⁹Paine, op. cit., I, 472.

His eight years in the White House marked the lowest
 depths--in domestic affairs at least--to which any
 American administration has fallen. They were little
 better than a national disgrace.

It is true that in 1872 Mr. Tilden attacked political
 conditions of this era, but he never seems to have realized
 that Grant's utter ineffectiveness as an executive helped
 the corruption reach unbelievable proportions.

Tilden's lack of vision can be illustrated by the fact
 that in 1872 he supported Grant, and opposed Horace Greeley.
 Many important citizens, disgraced at the hanging and graft
 under Grant, formed the Liberal Republican party in 1872.
 Led by Carl Schurz, Charles Francis Adams, Salmon P. Chase,
 and Greeley, they campaigned for honesty and efficiency in
 the federal government. The reformer revolt failed, and
 Grant, with his military prestige still high, continued in
 office. The Liberal Republicans, however, had helped un-
 cover the Credit Mobilier scandal, the Salary Grab, the
 Whiskey Ring, and other grafts. But Tilden continued to sup-
 port Grant, and after the election wrote to correspondent Eben
 as West, who had also opposed Greeley, "Well, you were more than
 any other man here was a prodigious victory for Grant--I
 mean, rather for civilization and progress." This was

812p. 111. 30.

912p. 92. 111. 30.

caused Edgar Lee Masters to comment:

Is any additional proof needed beyond this attitude of Twain in this matter that Twain neither in mind nor in moral character measured up to the business of being the satirist of the Gilded Age?¹⁰

Twain continued in his old-line Republican attitude when in 1876 he supported Rutherford B. Hayes. On one occasion he said, "If Tilden is elected I think the entire country will go pretty straight to -- Mrs. Howell's bad place."¹¹ Howells had urged Twain to enter the campaign for Hayes, but Twain replied with some wisdom:

My Dear Howells,-- I am glad you think I could do Hayes any good, for I have been wanting to write a letter or make a speech to that end. I'll be careful not to do either, however, until the opportunity comes in a natural, justifiable and unlogged way; and shall not then do anything unless I've got it all digested and worded just right. I which case I might do some good-- in any other I should do harm. When a humorist ventures upon the grave concerns of life he must do his job better than another man or he works harm to his cause.¹²

The proper occasion did arise, and Twain spoke in Hartford. Howells claimed it put Civil Service reform in a nutshell.¹³ Four years later Twain made several speeches for the Republican James A. Garfield. Despite this strict adherence

¹⁰Masters, op. cit., p. 93.

¹¹Paine, op. cit., II, 582.

¹²Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 283-84.

¹³Ibid., I, 287.

caused Edgar Lee Masters to comment:

Is any additional proof needed beyond this attitude of
Twin in this matter that Twin's nature is mind not in
moral character measured up to the business of being
the artist of the Gilded Age?

Twin continued in his old-time Republican attitude
when in 1876 he supported Rutherford B. Hayes. On one oc-
casion he said, "If Tilden is elected I think the entire
country will go pretty straight to -- Mrs. Howell's bed
place." Howell had urged Twin to enter the campaign
for Hayes, but Twin replied with some wisdom:

My Dear Howell, -- I am glad you think I could do
Hayes any good, for I have been wanting to write a let-
ter or make a speech for that end. I'll be careful not
to do either, however, until the opportunity comes to
a natural, justifiable and unobtrusive way and shall not
then do anything unless I've got it all digested and
worded just right. I which case I might do some good.
In any other I should do harm. When a minister has
lured upon the grave concerns of life he owes to his
job better than another man or his words to his
cause.

The proper occasion the artist, and Twin broke in Hartford.
Howells claimed it put Civil Service reform in a nutshell.
Four years later Twin made several speeches for the Re-
publican James A. Garfield. Despite this strict adherence

¹⁰Masters, op. cit., p. 93.

¹¹Pattee, op. cit., II, 582.

¹²Clement, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., I, 263-264.

¹³Ibid., I, 267.

to the Republican party, Twain had written, "But in truth I care little about any party's politics--the man behind it is the important thing."¹⁴

Twain finally put this theory into effect in 1884, when James G. Blaine opposed Grover Cleveland. To the horrified consternation of his friends, Twain bolted from the Republican party and supported Cleveland. He made several speeches against Blaine, and wrote to his close friends in exhortation that they too oppose Blaine. Twain wrote to Howells:

My Dear Howells,- Somehow I can't seem to rest quiet under the idea of your voting for Blaine. I believe you said something about the country and the party. Certainly allegiance to these is well; but as certainly a man's first duty is to his own conscience and honor--the party or the country to come second after that, and never first. I don't ask you to vote at all-- I only urge you not to soil yourself by voting for Blaine.¹⁵

After the election Twain spoke at the Hartford Monday Evening Club in defense of his political stand:

This is a funny business, all round. The same men who enthusiastically preach loyal consistency to church and party are always ready and willing and anxious to persuade a Chinaman or an Indian or a Kanaka to desert his Church, or a fellow-American to desert his party. The man who deserts to them is all that is high and pure and beautiful--apparently; the man who deserts from

¹⁴Ibid., I, 286.

¹⁵Ibid., II, 445.

to the Republican party, Twain had written, "But in truth I care little about any party's politics--the man behind it is the important thing."¹⁴

Twain finally put this theory into effect in 1884,

when James G. Blaine opposed Grover Cleveland. To the horrified consternation of his friends, Twain belted from the Republican party and supported Cleveland. He made several speeches against Blaine, and wrote to his close friends in exhortation that they too oppose Blaine. Twain wrote to

Howells:

My dear Howells,-- Somehow I can't seem to rest quiet under the idea of your voting for Blaine. I believe you said something about the country and the party. Certainly allegiance to these is well; but as certainly a man's first duty is to his own conscience and honor--the party or the country to come second after that, and never first. I don't ask you to vote at all--I only urge you not to sell yourself by voting for Blaine.¹⁵

After the election Twain spoke at the Hartford Monday Evening

Club in defense of his political stand:

This is a funny business, all round. The same man who enthusiastically pressed loyal consistency to church and party are always ready and willing and anxious to persuade a Chinaman or an Indian or a Kanaka to desert his church, or a fellow-American to desert his party. The man who deserts to them is all that is high and pure and beautiful--apparently; the man who deserts from

¹⁴ Ibid., I, 286.

¹⁵ Ibid., II, 442.

them is all that is foul and despicable. This is Consistency with a capital C.¹⁶

Twain now bitterly opposed loyalty to petrified opinions, and insisted upon the right of every American to support the better candidate, no matter what his party. Twain came to believe a man's first duty was to his country.

The controversies over Cleveland and Blaine led him to devise a plan for a "Casting-Vote" party. Highly enthusiastic over this idealistic scheme, Twain thought it would put American politics on the highest of planes. A party was to be organized which would not put forth a candidate of its own, but which would support the best candidate nominated by all the other parties. Twain's party would control the elections and force the parties to nominate good men. Needless to say, nothing ever developed from this Utopian plan.¹⁷

One critic, Walter Blair, has seen support of Grover Cleveland's administration in Twain's Connecticut Yankee. Except for The Gilded Age little of Twain's fiction contains commentaries upon specific administrations, but Blair claims the Connecticut Yankee exhibits several of Cleveland's policies:

¹⁶Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., pp. 129-30.

¹⁷Paine, op. cit., III, 1147.

then is all that is left of the Democratic Party in the
State with a capital D.

Twain now bitterly opposed Jay's no restricted campaign
and insisted upon the right of every American to support
the better candidate, no matter what his party. Twain
to believe a man's first duty was to his country.

The controversy over Cleveland and Hayes led Twain
to devise a plan for a "Casting Vote" party. His plan was
to take over this idealistic scheme. Twain thought it would
put American politics on the highest of planes.
was to be organized which would not only form a committee
of its own, but which would suggest the best candidate for
election by all the other parties. Twain's plan would have
two of the elections and force the parties to nominate a
man. Twain's plan was to say, "We have no more to say
about this."

Twain's plan was to say, "We have no more to say
about this." One critic, Mr. J. H. P. Smith, in his
Cleveland's administration, 1896-1900, says:
Except for the United and Middle of Twain's plan
twain commented upon specific administration, but
claims the Commercial Appeal editor's account of Twain's
policy.

Twain's plan was to say, "We have no more to say
about this." Twain, pp. 215, 1896.

Clemens, who had been a vigorous supporter of Cleveland's candidacy, made his book speak in favor of the President. Along with the low comedy and the snaps at England in the *Yankee* were passages which one way and another backed up Cleveland's most important policies--the policies repudiated by the electorate in 1888 when Cleveland, running for a second term, was defeated.¹⁸

Cleveland had tried to reform the civil service, to reduce graft, and to lower the tariff. Twain's passage in the Connecticut Yankee about the prejudiced military appointments reflected upon the American methods of spoils-system Army appointments. Blair stated, "For readers engaged in the red-hot arguments of the day, this passage attacked not only the unqualified men who got offices because of their birth but also those who got offices because of their party politics."¹⁹ According to Blair, another passage about appropriations for the "King's evil" criticized "pork-barrel" laws which gave grafting business men huge profits.²⁰ Twain devoted an entire chapter to the tariff, one of the hottest issues in the election of 1888. Cleveland had called for a tariff reduction, and Twain let Hank argue with the blacksmith about tariffs. The wise Yankee stood for free trade, and protectionism was made to seem foolish. Blair concluded,

¹⁸Walter Blair, Horse Sense in American Humor (Chicago, University of Chicago Press, 1942), pp. 206-7.

¹⁹Ibid., p. 207.

²⁰Loc. cit.

"A book that sold by the hundred thousands amused people with buffoonery and clowning while at the same time it slipped in little sermons like this on the most disputed issues of the day."²¹

In the years after Cleveland's administration, Twain became more and more disillusioned over American politics, and uttered little comment on political issues other than exasperated expressions of futility. He said nothing about Benjamin Harrison, spoke of McKinley only to attack his Philippine policy, and simply expressed disgust at the human race when he learned of McKinley's assassination.

Twain, however, did show more interest in Theodore Roosevelt. Captivated by Roosevelt's personality, he aptly described him in his Autobiography:

Mr. Roosevelt is one of the most likable men that I am acquainted with. I have known him, and have occasionally met him, dined in his company, lunched in his company for certainly twenty years. I always enjoy his society, he is so hearty, so straightforward, outspoken, and, for the moment, so absolutely sincere. These qualities endear him to me when he is acting in his capacity of private citizen, they endear him to all his friends. But when he is acting under their impulse as President, they make of him a sufficiently queer president. He flies from one thing to another with incredible dispatch--throws a somersault and is straightway back again where he was last week. He will then throw some more somersaults and nobody can foretell where he is finally going to land after the series. Each act of his, and each

²¹Ibid., p. 209. Twain also criticized a high protective tariff in Tom Sawyer Abroad, op. cit., pp. 97-100, where Huck, Tom, and Jim discussed the problem. Jim's argument claimed that a tariff is an artificial regulation, and is not morally necessary.

"A book that sold by the hundred thousands among people with
 buffoonery and clowning while at the same time it slipped in
 little serious line this on the most disputed issues of the
 day." 21

In the years after Cleveland's administration, T. W. Tamm
 became more and more distinguished over American politics,
 and uttered little comment on political issues other than
 exaggerated expressions of futility. He said nothing about
 Benjamin Harrison, spoke of McKinley only to attack his
 Philippine policy, and sharply expressed disgust at the human
 race when he learned of McKinley's assassination.

Tamm, however, did show more interest in Theodore
 Roosevelt. Captivated by Roosevelt's personality, he aptly
 described him in his Autobiography:

Mr. Roosevelt is one of the most likable men that I am
 acquainted with. I have known him, and have occasionally
 met him, since in his company, I always enjoy his society.
 He is so hearty, so straightforward, outspoken, and, for
 the moment, so absolutely sincere. These qualities en-
 dear him to me when he is acting in his capacity of
 private citizen, they endear him to all his friends. But
 when he is acting under their impulse as President, they
 make of him a sufficiently queer president. He flies
 from one thing to another with incredible dispatch--
 throws a somersault and is straightway back again where
 he was last week. He will then throw some more somersaults
 and nobody can foretell where he is finally going
 to land after the series. Each act of his, and each

218b., p. 209. Tamm also exhibited a high pro-
 fective tariff in Tom Sawyer Abroad, pp. 97-100,
 where Huck, Tom, and Jim discussed the problem. Jim's argu-
 ment claimed that a tariff is an artificial regulation, and
 is not morally necessary.

opinion expressed, is likely to abolish or controvert some previous act or expressed opinion. . . . But every opinion that he expresses is certainly his sincere opinion at that moment, and it is as certainly not the opinion which he was carrying around in his system three or four weeks earlier, and which was just as sincere and honest as the latest one. . . . He is the most popular human being that has ever existed in the United States, and that popularity springs from just these enthusiasms of his--these joyous ebullitions of excited sincerity. . . . He can't stick to one of them long enough to find out what kind of a chick it would hatch if it had a chance, but everybody recognizes the generosity of the intention and admires it and loves him for it.²²

However strongly attracted to Roosevelt, Twain did not approve of his politics, and wrote to Joseph Twichell:

Dear Joe,-- I knew I had in me somewhere a definite feeling about the President if I could only find the words to define it with. Here they are, to a hair--from Leonard Jerome: "For twenty years I have loved Roosevelt the man and hated Roosevelt the statesman and politician."²³

When the election of 1904 approached, Twain was again disgusted at the campaigning and wrote once more to Twichell:

Oh, dear! get out of that sewer--party politics--dear Joe. . . . In a few days you will be out of it, and then you can fumigate yourself and take up your legitimate work again and resume your clean and wholesome private character once more and be happy--and useful.²⁴

In the same letter Twain was vexed to catch himself criticizing Roosevelt when he knew the president was ". . . merely a helpless and irresponsible coffee-mill ground by the hand

²²Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 289-91.

²³Clemens, Mark Twain's Letters, op. cit., II, 766.

²⁴Ibid., II, 761-63.

of God."²⁵ His What Is Man? philosophy fully developed, Twain thought it futile to take part in political affairs, and wrote or said little on the subject thereafter, although Bernard DeVoto has edited an unpublished manuscript which is possibly a criticism of Roosevelt's excessive granting of military pensions in a presidential year.²⁶

There have been no records of any interest by Twain in the election of 1908. By that time his disillusionment had become almost complete. Two years earlier he had said:

Senator Tillman of South Carolina has been making a speech--day before yesterday--of frank and intimate criticism of the President--the President of the United States, as he calls him; whereas, so far as my knowledge goes, there has been no such functionary as President of the United States for forty years, perhaps, if we except Cleveland. I do not call to mind any other President of the United States--there may have been one or two--perhaps one or two, who were not always and persistently president of the Republican party, but were now and then for a brief interval really Presidents of the United States.²⁷

After many years of strict adherence to party, Twain had eventually showed enough insight to perceive the mediocrity of the American presidents in the latter part of the nineteenth century, but on few occasions did he talk or write about the important national issues. His interests were

²⁵Ibid., II, 764.

²⁶Samuel L. Clemens, "Passage from Outline of History," Bernard DeVoto, editor, The Saturday Review of Literature, XIX (December 10, 1938), 4.

²⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 345.

of God.²⁵ His What Is Man? philosophy fully developed.
 Twain thought it futile to take part in political activities,
 and wrote or said little on the subject thereafter, although
 Bernard DeVoto has edited an unpublished manuscript which is
 possibly a criticism of Roosevelt's excessive granting of
 military pensions in a presidential year.²⁶

There have been no records of any interest by Twain
 in the election of 1908. By that time his disengagement
 had become almost complete. Two years earlier he had said:

Senator Tillman of South Carolina has been making a
 speech--day before yesterday--of frank and bold
 criticism of the President--the President of the United
 States, as he calls him; whereas, so far as my knowledge
 goes, there has been no such functionary as President
 of the United States for forty years, perhaps, if we
 except Cleveland. I do not call to mind any other
 President of the United States--there may have been one or
 two--perhaps one or two, who were not always and per-
 sistent presidents of the Republican party, but were
 now and then for a brief interval really Presidents
 of the United States.²⁷

After many years of strict adherence to party, Twain had
 eventually showed enough insight to perceive the mediocrity
 of the American presidents in the latter part of the nine-
 teenth century, but on few occasions did he talk or write
 about the important national issues. His interests were

²⁵Ibid., II, 764.

²⁶Samuel L. Clemens, "Passage from Online to History,"
 Bernard DeVoto, editor, The Saturday Review of Literature,
 XIX (December 10, 1938), 4.

²⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I.

about as keen as the "average American citizen's," but were never profound.

Despite this dearth of opinion on particular political issues, Mark Twain commented frequently on elections in general. He once said, "If we would learn what the human race really is at bottom, we need only observe it in election time."²⁸ On numerous occasions he attacked the buying of votes, and described the scandals associated with elections. In one sketch where Twain fancied himself running for governor of New York, he discovered a shocking array of lies about him spread through the newspapers. In vicious articles his character was dragged through the mud.²⁹ In a second sketch he described Julius Caesar's death as it might have been reported in the newspapers. The murder, a brutal political killing, was followed by election riots. The analogy to American practices is unmistakable.³⁰

Twain also criticized American complacency and the sheep-like adherence to party lines. In The Gilded Age, when Senator Dilworthy³¹ was exposed as a vote-buyer, Twain commented:

Perhaps it did not occur to the nation of good and worthy people that while they continued to sit comfortably at

²⁸Ibid., II, 11.

²⁹Clemens, "Running for Governor," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 410-16.

³⁰Clemens, "The Killing of Julius Caesar Localized," Ibid., pp. 384-88.

³¹Twain was caricaturing the corrupt vote-buying Senator Pomeroy of Kansas.

home and leave the true source of our political power (the "primaries") in the hands of saloon-keepers, dog-fanciers, and hod-carriers, they could go on expecting "another" case of this kind, and even dozens and hundreds of them, and never be disappointed. However, they may have thought that to sit at home and grumble would some day right the evil.³²

Twain had made a similar complaint a few pages earlier when he criticized the corrupt campaign and public apathy which enabled Mr. O'Riley to reach Congress:

The publicans and their retainers rule the ward meetings (for everybody else hates the worry of politics and stays at home); the delegates from the ward meetings organize as a nominating convention and make up a list of candidates - one convention offering a Democratic and another a Republican list of - incorruptibles; and then the great meek public come forward at the proper time and make unhampered choice and bless Heaven that they live in a free land where no form of despotism can ever intrude.³³

The docile acceptance of party policies was attacked by Twain in his speech celebrating the twenty-fifth anniversary of Tuskegee Institute. Twain described two types of Christian morals, one private and the other public. For three hundred and sixty-three days the citizen, true to his private morals, keeps himself clean:

. . . then in the other two days of the year he leaves his Christian private morals at home and carries his Christian public morals to the tax office and the polls, and does the best he can to damage and undo his whole

³²Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., II, 276.

³³Ibid., II, 17.

home and leave the true source of our political power (the "primaries") in the hands of saloon-keepers, dog-fanciers, and hood-carriers. They would go on expelling "another" class of this kind, and even dozens and hundreds of more, and never be disappointed. However, they may have thought that to sit at home and grapple would come day right the evil.

Twain had made a similar complaint a few pages earlier when he criticized the corrupt campaign and public spending which enabled Mr. O'Riley to reach Congress.

The publishers and their retainers rule the ward meetings (for everybody else has the worry of politics and stays at home); the delegates from the ward meeting organize as a nominating convention and make up a list of candidates - one convention offering a Democratic and another a Republican list of - inconspicuous; and then the most public come forward as the proper thing and make a numbered choice and when Heaven that they live in a free land where no form of despotism can ever intrude.

The double acceptance of party politics was attacked by Twain in his speech celebrating the twenty-fifth anniversary of Jackson's presidency. Twain classified two types of party of Jacksonian politics, one private and the other public. Three hundred and sixty-three days the citizen, from his private morals, keeps himself clean.

... then in the other two days of the year he leaves his Christian private morals at home and carries his Christian public morals to the tax office and the police, and does the best he can to damage and undo his morals.

year's faithful and righteous work. Without a blush he will vote for an unclean boss if that boss is his party's Moses, without compunction he will vote against the best man in the whole land if he is on the other ticket.³⁴

Twain had several opinions on voting requirements. In 1901 he spoke strongly in favor of women's suffrage,³⁵ but in earlier years had on at least two occasions opposed universal suffrage. In his twelfth letter from the Sandwich Islands in 1866, Twain spoke of the late King Kamehameha IV:

He took back a good deal of power which his predecessors had surrendered to the people, abolished the universal suffrage clause and denied the privilege of voting to all save such as were possessed of a hundred dollars worth of real estate or had an income of seventy-five dollars a year. And, if my opinion were asked, I would say he did a wise thing in this last named matter.³⁶

Twain developed this idea in his sketch, "The Curious Republic of Gondour," which he published anonymously in 1875. In this Utopia each man started with one vote, but money and learning entitled men to more votes. Education would give more votes than money; thus the educated men would possess the balance of power, and they would be ". . . the vigilant and efficient protectors of the great lower rank of society."³⁷ There were, however, some veiled satirical implications that

³⁴Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., pp. 276-77.

³⁵Ibid., pp. 222-24.

³⁶Frear, op. cit., pp. 318-19.

³⁷Samuel L. Clemens, "The Curious Republic of Gondour," Atlantic Monthly, XXXVI (October, 1875), 461.

year's faithful and strenuous work. Without a doubt he will vote for an American born all that he can. He will vote for an American born all that he can. He will vote for an American born all that he can.

Twain had several opinions on voting requirements.

In 1901 he spoke strongly in favor of women's suffrage, but in earlier years had on at least two occasions opposed universal suffrage. In his twelfth letter from the Sandwich Islands in 1866, Twain spoke of the late King Kame-

hameha IV:

He took back a good deal of power which his predecessors had surrendered to the people, abolished the universal suffrage clause and denied the privilege of voting to all save such as were possessed of a hundred dollars worth of real estate or had an income of seventy-five dollars a year. And, in my opinion very wisely, I would say he did a wise thing in this late monarch's reign.

Twain developed this idea in his story, "The Curious History of Gondwanaland," which he published anonymously in 1873. In this Utopia each man started with one vote, but money and learning entitled men to more votes. Education would give more votes than money; thus the educated men would possess the balance of power, and they would be "... the vigilant and efficient protectors of the great lower rank of society." There were, however, some veiled satirical implications that

³⁷Clemens, Mark Twain's Anecdotes, pp. 211, pp. 212-13.

³⁸Ibid., pp. 212-13.

³⁹Ibid., pp. 211, pp. 212-13.

⁴⁰Clemens, L. Clemens, "The Curious History of Gondwanaland," Atlantic Monthly, XXXVI (October, 1873), 411.

money would still be important in acquiring votes. In this sketch Twain, usually considered a great democrat, advanced a form of paternalism. Written during his years of strict adherence to the Republican party, the sketch called for no moral courage on Twain's part, because he had printed the article anonymously.

Politics were important to Twain, but like so many other things in his life, were often sacrificed to expediency. Blair has said, "In the years when he was winning fame . . . Clemens usually avoided political controversy."³⁸ In his later years he advocated expediency if certain conditions warranted the action. He spoke of Twichell:

His persistency in voting right has been an exasperation to me these many years and has been the cause and inspiration of more than one vicious letter from me to him. But the viciousness was all a pretense. I have never found any real fault with him for voting his infernal Republican ticket, for the reason that, situated as he was, with a large family to support, his first duty was not to his political conscience, but to his family conscience. A sacrifice had to be made; a duty had to be performed. His very first duty was to his family, not to his political conscience. He sacrificed his political independence, and saved his family by it. In the circumstances, this was the highest loyalty, and the best.³⁹

In other words, the inconsistent Mark Twain was now advocating personal expediency rather than a stand for the good of

³⁸Blair, op. cit., p. 197.

³⁹Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., II, 24.

the nation. Twain had many fine social theories, but more often than not he did not put them into practice.

II. LEGISLATURES

The legislative branch of any government almost invariably could throw Twain into violent exasperation. There was no other man-made institution which he so strongly and consistently attacked. A list of his criticisms of legislatures would be longer than the account of his speculations. A few of the more characteristic remarks are worth quoting in order to show his attitude. He once wrote, "Reader, suppose you were an idiot. And suppose you were a member of Congress. But I repeat myself."⁴⁰ He also said, "It could probably be shown by facts and figures that there is no distinctly native American criminal class except Congress,"⁴¹ and later, when describing a chameleon, commented, ". . . he whirls one eye rearward and the other forward--which gives him a most Congressional expression (one eye on the constituency and one on the swag)"⁴² All legislatures he ever knew were composed of ". . . the smallest minds and the selfishest souls and the cowardliest hearts that God

⁴⁰Paine, op. cit., II, 724.

⁴¹Clemens, Following the Equator, op. cit., I, 80.

⁴²Ibid., II, 319.

the nation. Twain had many fine social theories, but more often than not he did not put them into practice.

II. LEGISLATURE

The legislative branch of any government classically varies could throw Twain into violent indignation. There was no other man-made institution which he so thoroughly and constantly attacked. A list of his criticisms of Congress would be longer than the account of his speech-making. A few of the more characteristic remarks are worth quoting in order to show his attitude. He once wrote, "Suppose you were an idiot. And suppose you were a member of Congress. But I repeat myself."¹ He also said, "It could probably be shown by facts and figures that there is no distinctly native American criminal class except Congress."² and later, when describing a chamberlain, commented, "He whirled one eye rearward and the other forward--which gives him a most Congressional expression (one eye on the constituency and one on the sway)."³ All legislators he ever knew were composed of "... the smallest kind and the selfishest souls and the cowardliest hearts that God

¹Twain, op. cit., II, 724.

²Twain, Following the Hunter, op. cit., I, 80.

³Twain, II, 319.

makes."⁴³

Although Mark Twain may have been somewhat slow in perceiving certain aspects of nineteenth century life, he did see the tremendous inefficiency and corruption of many legislative bodies in the period. Parrington described the situation in Washington:

Congress had rich gifts to bestow--in lands, tariffs, subsidies, favors of all sorts; and when influential citizens made their wishes known to the reigning statesmen, the sympathetic politicians were quick to turn the government into the fairy godmother the voters wanted it to be. A huge barbecue was spread to which all presumably were invited.⁴⁴

Twain criticized not only the Great Barbecue but also lesser legislatures. He became one of the most feared political writers in Nevada,⁴⁵ and was ". . . unsparing in his ridicule of the Governor, the officials in general, the legislative members, and of individual citizens."⁴⁶ Elected president of that mock Nevada legislature called the "Third House," Twain concluded the session:

Gentlemen: Your proceedings have been exactly similar to those of the Convention which preceded you. You have considered a subject which you knew nothing about; spoken on every subject but the one before the House, and voted, without knowing what you were voting for, or having any idea what would be the general result of your action.⁴⁷

Twain had nothing but ridicule for the legislature of

⁴⁴Parrington, op. cit., III, 23.

⁴⁵Mack, op. cit., p. 324.

⁴⁶Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 206.

⁴⁷Mack, op. cit., p. 276.

Although Mark Twain may have been somewhat slow in perceiving certain aspects of nineteenth century life, he did see the tremendous inefficiency and corruption of many legislative bodies in the period. Partington described the situation in Washington:

Congress had rich gifts to bestow--in lands, titles, subsidies, favors of all sorts; and when influential citizens made their wishes known to the ruling class, the sympathetic politicians were quick to take the government into the fairy godmother the voters wanted it to be. A huge baroque was spread to which all eyes were invited.⁴¹

Twain criticized not only the Great Barbours but also lesser legislators. He became one of the most feared political writers in Nevada,⁴² and was "... comparing to his ridicule of the Governor, the officials in general, the legislative members, and of individual citizens."⁴³ Elected president of that mock Nevada legislature called the "Third House," Twain concluded the session:

Gentlemen: Your proceedings have been exactly similar to those of the Convention which preceded you. You have considered a subject which you knew nothing about; spoken on every subject but the one before the House; and voted without knowing what you were voting for, or having any idea what would be the general result of your action.

Twain had nothing but ridicule for the legislators of

⁴¹Partington, op. cit., III, 23.

⁴²Shack, op. cit., p. 324.

⁴³Brooks, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, op. cit., p. 100.

⁴⁴Shack, op. cit., p. 326.

the Sandwich Islands, which he visited in 1866, and he wrote sarcastically to the Sacramento Union:

The mental caliber of the Legislative Assembly is up to the average of such bodies the world over--and I wish it were a compliment to say it, but it is hardly so. . . . Few men of first class ability can afford to let their affairs go to ruin while they fool away their time in Legislatures for months on a stretch. . . . But your chattering, one-horse village lawyer likes it, and your solemn ass from the cow counties, who don't know the Constitution from the Lord's Prayer, enjoy it, and these you will always find in the Assembly; the one gabble, gabble, gabbling threadbare platitudes and "give-me-liberty-or-give-me-death" buncombe from morning till night, and the other asleep, with his slab-soled brogans set up like a couple of grave-stones on the top of his desk.⁴⁸

On many occasions Twain criticized Congress. While working in Washington in 1868, he wrote, "Whiskey is taken into the committee rooms in demijohns and carried out in demagogues."⁴⁹ He added later, "This is a place to get a poor opinion of everybody in. There are some pitiful intellects in this Congress."⁵⁰ Never impressed with the city of Washington, Twain at one time wished that New York were the capital city:

We should have a much better sort of legislation if we had these swollen country jakes in N. Y. as their capital. Congress ought to sit in a big city.

I remember how those pigmy Congressmen used to come into the Arlington breakfast room with a bundle of

⁴⁸Freer, op. cit., p. 320.

⁴⁹Paine, op. cit., I, 361.

⁵⁰Loc. cit.

the Sandwich Islands, which he visited in 1866, and he

wrote sarcastically to the Essexian:

The mental caliber of the legislative assembly is
up to the average of such bodies the world over—and
I wish it were a compliment to say it, but it is hardly
so. . . . Few men of first class ability can afford to
let their affairs go to ruin while they look away their
time in legislatures for months on a stretch. . . . But
your chartering, one-horse village lawyer like it, and
your solemn ass from the cow counties, who don't know
the Constitution from the Lord's Prayer, enjoy it, and
these you will always find in the Assembly. The one
gabbling, gabbling, gabbling, gabbling, gabbling, gabbling
me-liberty-or-give-me-death" puncheon from morning till
night, and the other asleep, with his side-achting
set up like a couple of grave-stones on the top of his
head.

On many occasions Twain criticized Congress. While
working in Washington in 1868, he wrote, "Whiskey is taken
into the committee rooms in demijohns and carried out in
demagogues." He added later, "This is a place to get a
poor opinion of everybody in. There are some pitiful in-
tellects in this Congress." Never impressed with the
city of Washington, Twain at one time wished that New York
were the capital city.

We should have a much better sort of legislation if
we had these swollen country jakes in N. Y. as their
capital. Congress ought to sit in a big city.

I remember how those pigmy Congressmen used to come
into the Arlington breakfast room with a bundle of

187. Essexian, op. cit., p. 350.

187. Essexian, op. cit., p. 361.

187. Essexian, op. cit.

papers and letters--you could see by their affection for it and their delight in this sort of display that out in the woods where they came from they weren't used to much mail matter.

They always occupied their seats at table a level hour after breakfast, to be looked at, though they wore a weak pretense of settling the affairs of empires, over their mail--contracting brows, etc.

How N.Y. would squeeze the conceit out of those poor little Congressmen.⁵¹

Other criticisms of Congress and Congressmen can be found in Twain's shorter sketches. "The Case of George Fisher," shows how the government is cheated by its own workers;⁵² the "Story of the Bad Little Boy" depicts the type of man in Congress;⁵³ a "Letter Read at a Dinner of the Knights of St. Patrick" satirizes corrupt legislators;⁵⁴ the "Legend of Sagenfeld, in Germany" ridicules cabinets and legislatures;⁵⁵ and "Stirring Times in Austria" shows

⁵¹Clemens, Mark Twain's Notebook, op. cit., pp. 131-32.

⁵²Clemens, "The Case of George Fisher," Sketches Old and New, op. cit., pp. 132-42.

⁵³Clemens, "Story of the Bad Little Boy," Ibid., pp. 54-59.

⁵⁴Clemens, "Letter Read at a Dinner of the Knights of St. Patrick," Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective, and Other Stories, op. cit., pp. 451-52.

⁵⁵Clemens, "The Legend of Sagenfeld, in Germany," Ibid., pp. 388-96.

papers and letters - you could see by their condition
it and their belief in this sort of display that only in
the woods where they were they were not to be seen
mail matter.

They always occupied their seats at table and
hour after breakfast, to be looked at, though they were
a weak pretense of reading the daily papers,
over their mail - contrasting letters, etc.

How S.Y. would express the concept out of those poor
little Congressmen.

Other criticism of Congress and Congressmen can be
found in Tustin's shorter sketches. "The Case of George
Fisher," shows how the government is abused by the law
woman; "The Story of the Red Little Boy," depicts the
type of man in Congress; "A Letter Read at a Dinner of the
Knights of St. Patrick," satirizes corrupt legislation;
the "Legend of Sargent," in Germany, ridicules a German
and legislation; and "Sitting Room in Berlin," shows

-
- 51 Clemens, Mark Twain's Sketches, pp. 111-12.
52 Clemens, "The Case of George Fisher," Clemens 51
and Max, pp. 132-33.
53 Clemens, "Story of the Red Little Boy," Ibid., pp.
54-55.
54 Clemens, "Letter Read at a Dinner of the Knights
of St. Patrick," For German Sketches, pp. 132-33.
and Other Stories, pp. 132-33.
55 Clemens, "The Legend of Sargent," in Germany,
Ibid., pp. 383-84.

the ineffectiveness of a Vienna legislature. Some of the methods and results are surprisingly like those in the various American law-making groups.⁵⁶

His greatest criticism of legislative bodies is found not in his shorter sketches, but in The Gilded Age. All phases of Congress are attacked. Landladies rented to Congressmen only if they paid in advance, because the legislators, secure from repercussions in their high offices, had often walked off without paying their bills.⁵⁷ Twain also thought merit meant nothing in Washington. "Unless you can get the ear of a Senator, or a Congressman, or a Chief of a Bureau or Department, and persuade him to use his 'influence' in your behalf," there was not even the most menial employment in Washington.⁵⁸ Congressmen dumped their friends upon the government for support nearly every day. "There is something good and motherly about Washington, the grand old benevolent National Asylum for the Helpless."⁵⁹ He referred to Benjamin Butler's scandalous "Salary Grab" of 1873 when he mentioned the Extra Compensation bill which "... slides neatly through, annually, with the extra grab that signalizes

⁵⁶Clemens, "Stirring Times in Austria," Literary Essays, op. cit., pp. 197-243.

⁵⁷Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., I, 238.

⁵⁸Ibid., I, 239.

⁵⁹Ibid., I, 240.

the effectiveness of a...
methods and results...
various American...
His greatest criticism...
not in his...
phases of...
grasses only...
lators, some...
often...
thought...
not...
between...
in your...
next...
the Government...
thing good...
nevolent...
to...
he mentioned...
nearly...

Respectfully,
Sincerely,
Very truly,
Very truly,
Very truly,

the last night of a session. . . ."⁶⁰ In this bill all the political henchmen were well rewarded.

Congressional appropriation bills and the corrupt purpose for which they were used were also criticized by Twain. When Harry Brierly asked the president of the Columbus River Slackwater Navigation Company what had happened to the \$200,000 appropriation, he was told:

Why the matter is simple enough. A Congressional appropriation costs money. Just reflect, for instance. A majority of the House committee, say, \$10,000 apiece--\$40,000; a majority of the Senate committee, the same each--say \$40,000; a little extra to one or two chairmen of one or two such committees, say \$10,000 each--\$20,000; and there's \$100,000 of the money gone, to begin with. Then, seven male lobbyists, at \$3,000 each--\$21,000; one female lobbyist, \$10,000; a high moral Congressman or Senator here and there--the high moral ones cost more, because they give tone to a measure--say ten of these at \$3,000 each, is \$30,000; then a lot of small-fry country members who won't vote for anything whatever without pay--say twenty at \$500 apiece, is \$10,000; a lot of dinners to members--say \$10,000 altogether; lot of jimcracks for Congressmen's wives and children--those go a long way--you can't spend too much money in that line. . . .⁶¹

The president continued his lecture with information on the successful methods used to secure advertising:

Perhaps the biggest thing we've done in the advertising line was to get an officer of the U.S. Government, of perfectly Himalayan official altitude, to write up our little internal improvement for a religious paper of

⁶⁰Loc. cit.

⁶¹Ibid., I, 276-77.

the last night of a session. . . . In this bill all the political handmen were well rewarded.

Congressional appropriation bills and the current bill pose for which they were used were also criticized by Twain. When Harry Brerly asked the president of the Columbia River Blackwater Navigation Company what had happened to the \$200,000 appropriation, he was told:

Why the matter is simple enough. A Congressional appropriation costs money. Just reflect, for instance, a majority of the House committee, say, \$10,000 apiece--\$40,000; a majority of the Senate committee, the same each--say \$20,000; a little extra for one or two chairmen of one or two such committees, say \$10,000 each--\$20,000; and there's \$100,000 of the money gone. To be gin with. Then, seven male lobbyists, at \$1,000 each--\$7,000; one female lobbyist, \$10,000; a high moral Congressman or Senator here and there--the high moral ones cost more, because they give some to a measure--say ten of these at \$2,000 each, is \$20,000; then a lot of small-city country members who won't vote for anything whatever without pay--say twenty at \$500 apiece, is \$10,000; a lot of others to make up--say \$10,000 apiece; lot of lawyers for Congressmen's wives and children--those go a long way--you can't spend too much money in that line. . . .

The president continued his lecture with information on the successful methods used to secure advertising:

Perhaps the biggest thing we've done in the advertising line was to get an officer of the U.S. Government, of perfectly Himselvan official attitude, to write up our little internal improvement for a religious paper of

60 Loc. cit.

61 Ibid., I, 276-77.

enormous circulation--I tell you, that makes our bonds go handsomely among the pious poor. Your religious paper is by far the best vehicle for a thing of this kind, because they'll "lead" your article and put it right in the midst of the reading-matter; and if it's got a few Scripture quotations in it, and some temperance platitudes, and a bit of gush here and there about Sunday-schools, and a sentimental snuffle now and then about "God's precious, the honest hard-handed poor," it works the nation like a charm, my dear sir, and never a man suspects that it is an advertisement; but your secular paper sticks you right into the advertising columns and of course you don't take a trick.⁶²

All these expenses left the new company \$25,000 in debt, and Harry discovered that he and Colonel Sellers, who hadn't received a penny in salaries, actually owed the company \$7,960!⁶³ Practices like these were frequent, and Twain told of the many derelicts in Washington who burned out their lives in an effort to secure government appropriations:

. . . It must have been only eternal hope springing in the breast that kept alive numerous old claimants who for years and years had besieged the doors of Congress, and who looked as if they needed not so much an appropriation of money as six feet of ground. And those who stood so long waiting for success to bring them death were usually those who had a just claim.⁶⁴

The Congressmen who were responsible for so many of these injustices were also criticized. One of the characters in The Gilded Age exemplified the spirit of the times even

⁶²Ibid., I, 278.

⁶³Ibid., I, 275.

⁶⁴Ibid., II, 126.

enormous circulation--I tell you, that makes our people so handsomely among the pious poor. Your religious paper is by far the best vehicle for a thing of this kind, because they'll "lead" your articles and put it right in the midst of the reading-matter; and it'll get a few Scripture quotations in it, and some long perances platitudes, and a bit of such here and there about Sunday-schools, and a sentimental snail's pace and then about "God's precious, the poorest heart-broken poor," it works the nation like a charm, my dear sir, and never a man suspects that it is an advertisement; but your secular paper which you right have the advantage of listing columns and of course you don't take a cent.

All these expenses left the new company \$25,000 in debt.

and Harry discovered that he and Colonel Sellers, who had

received a penny in salaries, actually cost the company

\$7,900.63. Practically like these were Freeman, and Lewis

told of the many derelicts in Washington who burned out

their lives in an effort to secure government appointments

. . . It must have been only eternal hope springing in

the breast that kept alive numerous old claimants who

for years and years had besieged the doors of Congress

and who looked as if they needed not so much an appropriation

of money as six feet of ground. And those who stood

so long waiting for success to bring them death were

usually those who had a just claim.

The Congressmen who were responsible for so many of

these injustices were also criticized. One of the characters

in The United Aes exemplified the spirit of the times even

62 Ibid., I, 278.

63 Ibid., I, 275.

64 Ibid., II, 126.

though he was not copied directly from any person living during the Great Barbecue:

The Hon. Patrique Oreille was a wealthy Frenchman from Cork. Not that he was wealthy when he first came from Cork, but just the reverse. When he first landed in New York with his wife, he had only halted at Castle Garden for a few minutes to receive and exhibit papers showing he had resided in this country two years--and then he voted the Democratic ticket and went uptown to hunt a house. He found one, and then went to work as assistant to an architect and builder, carrying a hod all day and studying politics evenings. Industry and economy soon enabled him to start a low rum shop in a foul locality, and this gave him political influence.⁶⁵

O'Riley gave alibis for his friends whenever they committed murders, and he soon became popular. Opening a saloon and gambling hall, he was soon rewarded with the position of alderman,⁶⁶ and thus became associated with William M. Weed (Boss Tweed). Next he ". . . furnished shingle-nails to the new courthouse at three thousand dollars a keg," and entered the state legislature as a reward for his efforts.⁶⁷ O'Riley, who had changed his name to Oreille, eventually reached Congress, along with the Honorable Oliver Higgins, a westerner who was elected to Congress because he sold the best liquor in his village.⁶⁸

Still another aspect of Congress which came under

⁶⁵Ibid., II, 17.

⁶⁶Ibid., II, 18.

⁶⁷Ibid., II, 19.

⁶⁸Ibid., II, 16.

Twain's baleful eye was the corrupt method of conducting Congressional investigations. The inimitable Colonel Sellers described the process to Washington Hawkins:

Why they proceed right and regular--and it ain't bosh, Washington, it ain't bosh. They appoint a committee to investigate, and that committee hears evidence three weeks, and all the witnesses on one side swear that the accused took money or stock or something for his vote. Then the accused stands up and testifies that he may have done it, but he was receiving and handling a good deal of money at the time and he doesn't remember this particular circumstance--at least with sufficient distinctness to enable him to grasp it tangibly. So of course the thing is not proven--and that is what they say in the verdict. They don't acquit, they don't condemn. They just say, 'Charge not proven.' It leaves the accused in a kind of a shaky condition before the country, it purifies Congress, it satisfies everybody, and it doesn't seriously hurt anybody. It has taken a long time to perfect our system, but it is the most admirable in the world now.⁶⁹

The height of corruption was reached when Senator Dilworthy (Pomeroy, of Kansas) wanted to be violently attacked. He succeeded, and Mr. Noble, the righteous accuser, was censured for instigating disreputable talk about a Senator!⁷⁰ Dilworthy knew the gullible American public would perceive his guilt, but would eventually feel sorry for him and back him even more firmly at the next election.

Twain criticized many other national evils in The Gilded Age, a satirical hodge-podge, but nothing was laid

⁶⁹Ibid., II, 204.

⁷⁰Ibid., II, 286.

Twain's painful eye was the corrupt method of conducting Congressional investigations. The inevitable Congressional reformers described the process for Washington historians.

Why they proceed right and regular—and it ain't
boast, Washington, it ain't boast. They appoint a
committee to investigate, and that committee hears
evidence three weeks, and all the witnesses on one
side swear that the accused took money or stock or
something for his vote. Then the accused stands up
and testifies that he may have done it, but he was
receiving and handling a good deal of money at the
time and he doesn't remember this particular charge
stands—at least with sufficient distinctness to enable
him to grasp it tentatively. So of course the whole is
not proven—and that is what they say in the verdict.
They don't convict, they don't condemn. They just say
'Charge not proven.' It leaves the accused in a kind
of a shaky condition before the country, it doesn't
convict, it satisfies everybody, and it doesn't
loosely hurt anybody. It has taken a long time to get
best our system, but it is the most admirable in the
world now.

The height of corruption was reached when Senator Dilworth
(Pomeroy, of Kansas) wanted to be violently attacked. He
succeeded, and Mr. Noble, the righteous seceder, was censured
for instigating disreputable talk about a Senator.
worthy knew the Gallician American public would perceive his
guilt, but would eventually feel sorry for him and back him
even more firmly at the next election.

Twain criticized many other national evils in his
Gilded Age, a satirical hodge-podge, but nothing was laid

6914d., II, 204.
7014d., II, 286.

bare more bluntly than the graft, corruption, and inefficiency connected with the Congress of the United States. If he had not let his friendship for General Grant stand in the way, and if he had been able to look more deeply into causes, Twain might have written the greatest exposé in American literature. Even so, The Gilded Age was one of the few American novels of the period which did attempt to show the many nation-wide abuses.

III. THE JUDICIARY AND LAW ENFORCEMENT

Methods of law enforcement were far from satisfactory, according to Twain, and on several occasions he sharply criticized either police methods or the jury system. He saw lawlessness of the most flagrant sort in the West, and in Roughing It mentioned the almost complete absence of law enforcement on the Comstock. Money could make any criminal innocent.⁷¹ After moving to San Francisco, he became disgusted at corruption in the inefficient police department and unsuccessfully attempted in the San Francisco papers to excoriate the police. His articles were not published because the papers had no desire to stir up trouble, but Twain sent the items back to Joe Goodman in Virginia

⁷¹Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 86.

have more than the usual...
...connected with the...
...not let his...
...and it has been...
...might have...
...Even so, the...
...American...
...many...wide...

ERASE BOND

...of the...
...the...
...either...
...of the...
...is...
...on the...
...innocent...
...at...
...and...
...to...
...the...
...had no...
...back to...

Violations, ...

City.⁷² One of these Enterprise stories, "What Have the Police Been Doing?" was partly responsible for the libel suit filed by the San Francisco police chief against the Virginia City Enterprise. California, however, had no jurisdiction over Nevada newspapers, and the suit was dropped.⁷³ Several years later the San Francisco police were again the butt of criticism in Twain's article "Disgraceful Persecution of a Boy." Twain excoriated the corrupt police who let wealthy adults murder Chinese immigrants, but threw tiny defenseless poor boys into jail for throwing stones at the Chinese.⁷⁴

Twain censured the police on other occasions. In Innocents Abroad he spoke of a Pompeian soldier who died at his post:

We never read of Pompeii but we think of that soldier; we can not write of Pompeii without the natural impulse to grant to him the mention he so well deserves. Let us remember that he was a soldier--not a policeman--and so, praise him. Being a soldier, he staid,--because the warrior instinct forbade him to fly. Had he been a policeman he would have staid, also--because he would have been asleep.⁷⁵

In A Tramp Abroad Twain told the story of the German parents

⁷²Ferguson, op. cit., p. 101.

⁷³Loc. cit.

⁷⁴Clemens, "Disgraceful Persecution of a Boy," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., p. 145.

⁷⁵Clemens, Innocents Abroad, op. cit., p. 335.

who, without attempting to hide their actions from the townspeople, slowly starved their child. The couple were finally arrested two weeks after the inquest, and Twain added, "Yes, they were arrested 'two weeks after the inquest.' What a home sound that has. That kind of police briskness . . . reminds me of my native land. . . ."76 A final criticism of the American police, "The Stolen White Elephant," satirized police detection methods. Police stupidity was showed to be even more startling than their corruption, for it took them weeks to find a lost elephant in the Metropolitan area. When asked about his duties, the inspector replied, "It is not our province to prevent crime, but to punish it. We cannot punish it until it is committed."77 Twain here showed an awareness of one of the most important faults in law enforcement procedure.

Even more important than his criticisms of the police and their methods, were Twain's attacks on the American courts and jury system. Judges prejudiced against the defendants were mentioned in "The Evidence in the Case of Smith Vs. Jones;"78 the use of legal technicalities to defeat justice

⁷⁶Samuel L. Clemens, A Tramp Abroad (New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907), II, 295.

⁷⁷Clemens, "The Stolen White Elephant," Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective and Other Stories, op. cit., p. 226.

⁷⁸Samuel L. Clemens, "The Evidence in the Case of Smith Vs. Jones," The Wit and Humor of America, Marshall P. Wilder, editor (New York and London: Funk and Wagnalls Company, 1911), X, 1919.

appeared in Twain's sketch, "From the 'London Times' of 1904;"⁷⁹ and a satirical remark that there is a resemblance between a bench of modern judges and a basket of vegetables appeared in "Switzerland, The Cradle of Liberty." Twain told how a skeleton was once admitted as a witness in an old Swiss law case; his implications were that modern law had not advanced far beyond that stage.⁸⁰

One of Twain's most outspoken attacks on American courts was the sketch, "A New Crime," which lamented that justice was being defeated by the insanity plea. He pointed out that many really insane people had been executed, but criminals with money were being acquitted on grounds of insanity. Twain listed several hypothetical instances of how the defendants escaped justice. One case at first proved difficult:

The jury were hardly inclined to accept these as proofs at first, inasmuch as the prisoner had never been insane before the murder, and under the tranquilizing effect of the butchering had immediately regained his right mind; but when the defense came to show that a third cousin of Hackett's wife's stepfather was insane . . . it was plain that insanity was hereditary in the family, and . . . the jury then acquitted him.⁸¹

⁷⁹Clemens, "From the 'London Times' of 1904," Literary Essays, op. cit., pp. 313-28.

⁸⁰Clemens, "Switzerland, The Cradle of Liberty," What is Man? And Other Essays, op. cit., p. 200.

⁸¹Clemens, "A New Crime," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 246-47.

appeared in Twain's sketch, "From the 'London Times' of 1904," and a satirical remark that there is a resemblance between a bench of modern judges and a basket of vegetables appeared in "Switzerland, The Cradle of Liberty." Twain told how a skeleton was once admitted as a witness in an old Swiss law case; his implications were that modern law had not advanced far beyond that stage.

One of Twain's most outspoken attacks on American courts was the sketch, "A New Crime," which asserted that justice was being defeated by the insanity plea. He pointed out that many really insane people had been executed, but criminals with money were being acquitted on grounds of insanity. Twain listed several hypothetical instances of how the defendants escaped justice. One case at first proved difficult:

The jury were hardly inclined to accept these as proofs at first, inasmuch as the prisoner had never been insane before the murder, and under the prevailing state of the purchasing had immediately regained his right mind; but when the defense came to show that a third cousin of Hecquet's wife's stepfather was insane . . . it was plain that insanity was hereditary in the family, and . . . the jury then acquitted him.

-
- 79 Clements, "From the 'London Times' of 1904," 141-142.
 80 Clements, "Switzerland, The Cradle of Liberty," 200.
 81 Clements, "A New Crime," Sketches New and Old, 246-47.

Twain related other instances, and then concluded his outburst:

Insanity certainly is on the increase in the world, and crime is dying out. There are no longer any murders--none worth mentioning, at any rate. Formerly if you killed a man, it was possible that you were insane--but now, if you, having friends and money, kill a man, it is evidence that you are a lunatic.⁸²

In Roughing It he began his eloquent criticism of the American jury system:

The men who murdered Virginia's original twenty-six cemetery-occupants were never punished. Why? Because Alfred the Great, when he invented trial by jury, and knew that he had admirably framed it to secure justice in his age of the world, was not aware that in the nineteenth century the condition of things would be so entirely changed that unless he rose from the grave and altered the jury plan to meet the emergency, it would prove the most ingenious and infallible agency for defeating justice that human wisdom could contrive. For how could he imagine that we simpletons would go on using his jury plan after circumstances had stripped it of its usefulness, any more than he could imagine that we would go on using his candle-clock after we had invented chronometers? In his day news could not travel fast, and hence he could easily find a jury of honest, intelligent men who had not heard of the case they were called to try--but in our day of telegraphs and newspapers his plan compels us to swear in juries composed of fools and rascals, because the system rigidly excludes honest men and men of brains.⁸³

⁸²Ibid., p. 249. Mark Twain could be found on both sides of almost every question, and although he usually criticized American law and courts, he championed the American system in The Prince and the Pauper, op. cit., p. 281, where he said the English judicial system had lagged behind ours in the dispensation of true justice.

⁸³Clemens, Roughing It, op. cit., II, 73.

Twain called this book "The Innocents Abroad" and "The Great American Road Trip".

Twain

Twain's journey is an important part of the American literary tradition. It is a story of a man who traveled across the United States and Europe, and who wrote about his experiences in a way that was both humorous and serious. Twain's journey is a testament to the power of the written word to capture the essence of a place and a time.

In Twain's journey, he traveled across the United States and Europe, and he wrote about his experiences in a way that was both humorous and serious.

the American people.

The journey was a long and arduous one, and Twain's descriptions of the people and places he encountered are both vivid and accurate. He wrote about the "Great American Road Trip" in a way that was both humorous and serious, and his descriptions of the people and places he encountered are both vivid and accurate. Twain's journey is a testament to the power of the written word to capture the essence of a place and a time.

Twain's journey is a testament to the power of the written word to capture the essence of a place and a time. It is a story of a man who traveled across the United States and Europe, and who wrote about his experiences in a way that was both humorous and serious. Twain's journey is a testament to the power of the written word to capture the essence of a place and a time.

Twain's journey is a testament to the power of the written word to capture the essence of a place and a time.

Twain continued, "The jury system puts a ban upon intelligence and honesty, and a premium upon ignorance, stupidity, and perjury."⁸⁴ He believed intelligent men, even if they had a priori opinions on a law case, should serve on the jury. "Why could not the jury law be so altered as to give men of brains and honesty an equal chance with fools and miscreants?"⁸⁵

Twain raised the same question on two occasions in The Gilded Age. Once he spoke of a jury composed of ". . . nine gentlemen from a neighboring asylum and three graduates from Sing Sing,"⁸⁶ but he was more realistic in his description of Laura Hawkins' trial. The defense attorney, Mr. Braham, had succeeded in obtaining a sympathetic jury:

The result of the whole day's work was the election of only two jurors. These, however, were satisfactory to Mr. Braham. He had kept off all those he did not know. No one knew better than this great criminal lawyer that the battle was fought on the selection of the jury. The subsequent examination of the witnesses, the eloquence expended on the jury are all for effect outside.⁸⁷

Great pains were taken in selecting the jury:

It was four weary days before this jury was made up, but when it was finally complete, it did great credit to the counsel for the defense. So far as Mr. Braham

⁸⁴Ibid., II, 76.

⁸⁵Loc. cit.

⁸⁶Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., II, 19.

⁸⁷Ibid., II, 230.

knew, only two could read, one of whom was the foreman, Mr. Braham's friend, the showy contractor. Low foreheads and heavy faces they all had; some had a look of animal cunning, while the most were only stupid. The entire panel formed that boasted heritage commonly described as the "bulwark of our liberties."⁸⁸

Twain, in public letters, also attacked the judicial system. A man named Foster was condemned to death in 1873, and Twain, in a letter to the New York Tribune, called for a revision in penal law:

The humorist who invented trial by jury played a colossal, practical joke upon the world, but since we have the system we ought to try to respect it, a thing which is not thoroughly easy to do, when we reflect that by the command of the law a criminal juror must be an intellectual vacuum, attached to a melting heart, and perfectly macaronian bowels of compassion.

I have had no experience in making laws or amending them, but still I cannot understand why, when it takes twelve men to inflict the death penalty upon a person, it should take any less than twelve men more to undo their work. If I were a legislature [sic] and had just been elected, and had not time to sell out, I would put the pardoning and commuting power into the hands of twelve able men instead of dumping so huge a burden upon the shoulders of one poor petition-persecuted individual.⁸⁹

This outburst was answered in the Tribune by a Mr. "H. K.," who spoke of those ". . . actors and clowns," who ". . . make it a business to cater to our amusement in jest and burlesque," and write of the Foster case with ". . . ghastly flippancy. . . ." ⁹⁰ There was no more comment by Twain on

⁸⁸Ibid., II, 231.

⁸⁹Arthur L. Vogelback, "Mark Twain: Newspaper Contributor," American Literature, XX (May, 1948), 113.

⁹⁰Loc. cit.

the subject, and his next letter to the Tribune dealt with the less sensational topic of life rafts for ocean liners.⁹¹ Arthur L. Vogelback inferred from a study of these letters that Twain was a powerful social critic,⁹² but the conclusion could also be drawn that Twain shied away from sustained social criticism because the public would not take him seriously.

IV. OTHER POLITICAL OR PUBLIC INTERESTS

Twain was concerned with many other aspects of political and public affairs. In a letter from the Sandwich Islands he mentioned the corrupt army contract system;⁹³ he satirized bureaucracy and governmental inefficiency in "The Facts in the Case of the Great Beef Contract;"⁹⁴ and he stated in a speech on January 4, 1901, that only one out of fifty city residents was corrupt, but the honest men did not organize and thus lost control of their city.⁹⁵ Twain also spoke against the corrupt practice of purchasing newspaper editorial space for private propaganda,⁹⁶ spoke at

⁹¹Ibid., p. 117.

⁹²Ibid., p. 128.

⁹³Frear, op. cit., p. 316.

⁹⁴Clemens, "The Facts in the Case of the Great Beef Contract," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 121-31.

⁹⁵Clemens, Mark Twain's Speeches, op. cit., p. 218.

⁹⁶Ibid., p. 48.

Albany in 1901 in favor of the Seymour bill to legalize osteopathy in New York State,⁹⁷ and made a long speech in 1906 in which he favored financial assistance for the blind.⁹⁸ In his Autobiography he also criticized treatment of the average blind person in New York State:

He lives merely by the charity of the compassionate, when he has no relatives able to support him--and now and then, as a benevolence, the state stretches out its charitable hand and lifts him over to Blackwell's Island and submerges him among the multitudinous population of thieves and prostitutes.⁹⁹

Twain was not seeking pure charity; he wanted an intelligent plan by which the blind could be educated to help themselves.¹⁰⁰

Other objects of attack were corrupt tax collectors and millionaires who perjured themselves in tax evasions,¹⁰¹ corruption in a New York City taxi company,¹⁰² exorbitant prices requested by undertakers for Negro funerals,¹⁰³ the

⁹⁷Ibid., pp. 232-34.

⁹⁸Ibid., pp. 306-14.

⁹⁹Clemens, Mark Twain's Autobiography, op. cit., I, 296.

¹⁰⁰Loc. cit.

¹⁰¹Clemens, "A Mysterious Visit," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 417-24.

¹⁰²Paine, op. cit., III, 1125-26.

¹⁰³Clemens, Life on the Mississippi, op. cit., p. 186.

disreputable decay into which the New York City cemeteries had fallen,¹⁰⁴ vivisection,¹⁰⁵ cruelty to animals in bull-fighting,¹⁰⁶ and the corrupt practice whereby ships "bought" health permits without inspection upon entering New York harbor. Twain ironically suggested that the latter process be simplified even further by an annual exchange of permits and fees by mail!¹⁰⁷

One of the less important public servants whom Twain consistently criticized was the coroner. Twain's "Petrified Man" sketch, written during his Washoe days, ridiculed Judge G. T. Sewall, the Humboldt Coroner.¹⁰⁸ "A Small Piece of Spite" was a later attack on coroners, criticizing the coroner's office in San Francisco which refused to give information to the newspapers.¹⁰⁹ Another satire on coroner's jury methods appeared in The Gilded Age. A steam-

¹⁰⁴Clemens, "A Curious Dream," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 251-64.

¹⁰⁵Clemens, "A Dog's Tale," The \$30,000 Bequest, and Other Stories, op. cit., pp. 48-64.

¹⁰⁶Clemens, "A Horse's Tale," Harper's Monthly Magazine, CXIII (August and September, 1906), 327-42, 539-49.

¹⁰⁷Clemens, "Some Rambling Notes of An Idle Excursion," Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective, and Other Stories, op. cit., p. 301.

¹⁰⁸Clemens, "The Petrified Man," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 316-20.

¹⁰⁹Benson, op. cit., p. 190.

discrepancies... had followed... lightning... health... harbor... be simplified even... and seen by...

One of the first... constantly... Mr. ... Judge ... Place of ... the former's... information...

one's... on... Other... same... Other... One...

boat had exploded because of negligence in taking safety precautions during a race:

A jury of inquest was impaneled, and after due deliberation and inquiry they returned the inevitable American verdict which has been so familiar to our ears all the days of our lives--'NOBODY TO BLAME.'¹¹⁰

A final activity to be mentioned in this chapter was Twain's attack in 1901 on Tammany Hall. Wagenknecht has said, "Undoubtedly his most spectacular public service came in connection with his assault against Tammany,"¹¹¹ while Ferguson added, "However loudly he might damn the human race, he was always trying to save it or portions of it by mental healing, by osteopathy, by plasmon or by opposing Tammany."¹¹² A fusion ticket was attempting to break the power of Tammany Hall, and Twain joined the Acorns, a society in opposition to Tammany. He spoke at the club's dinner, and criticized Tammany by paraphrasing Edmund Burke's speech against Warren Hastings.¹¹³ Paine spoke of Twain's enthusiasm for the reform movement:

Clemens was really heart and soul in the campaign. He even joined a procession that marched up Broadway, and he made a speech to a great assemblage at Broadway

38. ¹¹⁰Clemens and Warner, The Gilded Age, op. cit., I,

¹¹¹Wagenknecht, op. cit., p. 235.

¹¹²Ferguson, op. cit., p. 287.

¹¹³Wyatt, op. cit., p. 605.

boat had exploded because of negligence in carrying out

proceedings during a race

A jury of inquiry was appointed, and after due deliberation and inquiry they returned the following American verdict which has been no longer in force since all the data of our investigation have been

A final verdict to be mentioned in this report was

Twin's attack in 1901 on Tammany Hall, which was

said, "Undoubtedly the most spectacular public attack since

in connection with his assault against Tammany, which was

Ferguson added, "However, it is the night of the

race, he was always trying to save it on account of its

by mental health, by education, by science or by necessity

Tammany. A further attack was attempted to break the

power of Tammany Hall, and this was the second

society in opposition to Tammany. It was at the time

glorious, and criticized Tammany by parading through the

speech against Tammany Hall. The attack on Tammany

enthusiasm for the reform movement

Glenn was really heart and soul in the campaign. He even joined a procession that marched up Broadway and he made a speech to a great assembly at Broadway

110. Johnson and Warner, The United States, pp. 111-112.

38.

111. Wegmann, pp. 111-112, p. 113.

112. Ferguson, pp. 111-112, p. 113.

113. Wyatt, pp. 111-112, p. 113.

and Leonard Street, when, as he said, he had been sick
 abed two days and, according to the doctor, should be
 in bed then.¹¹⁴

The movement succeeded, and Tammany was defeated. News-
 papers celebrated Twain in verse:

Who killed Croker?
 I, said Mark Twain,
 I killed Croker,
 I, the Jolly Joker!¹¹⁵

Paine has called Mark Twain a political knight-er-
 rant, always doing what he could for the betterment of the
 people,¹¹⁶ but the evidence does not seem to be so strong.
 Twain, it is true, did show a considerable interest in pol-
 itics and public affairs, but for many years he was a strict
 Republican party man. He also allowed friendship to blind
 him to the evils of corruption, and took the expedient side
 rather than the reformer's when an issue was extremely con-
 troversial. He spoke or wrote on a great many things, but
 many which are listed in the latter part of this chapter
 are relatively minor topics. Compare, for instance, the
 list of reform movements compiled by Thomas M. Pearce, with
 which William Cullen Bryant was associated. Bryant was one
 of the ". . . most untiring enemies of Tweed, and all he

¹¹⁴Paine, op. cit., III, 1146.

¹¹⁵Ibid., III, 1147.

¹¹⁶Loc. cit.

and Leonard Street, when, as he said, he had been
 shed two days and, according to the doctor, should be
 in bed then. 116

The movement succeeded, and Germany was defeated. 117

papers defeated Twin in various

Who killed Croker?
 I, said Mark Twain,
 I killed Croker,
 I, the Jolly Joker! 118

Paine has called Mark Twain's political knight-er-

rant, always doing what he could for the betterment of the
 people, 119 but the evidence does not seem to be so strong.

Twin, it is true, did show a considerable interest in po-
 litics and public affairs, but for many years he was a

Republican party man. He also allowed friendship to blind

him to the evils of corruption, and took the expedition side

rather than the reformer's when ex Texas was extremely con-

servative. He spoke or wrote on a great many things, but

many which are listed in the latter part of this chapter

are relatively minor topics. Compare, for instance, the

list of reform movements compiled by Thomas M. Paine, with

which William O'Brien's report was associated. Bryant was one

of the "... most untiring enemies of Tweed, and all his

116 Paine, op. cit., III, 116.

117 Ibid., III, 117.

118 Ibid., III.

stood for,"¹¹⁷ and "A list of his attitudes reads like the history of the steps forward in this country. . . ."¹¹⁸

Pearce continued:

. . . He supported Andrew Jackson in the campaign of 1827, opposed the private financial interests during the stormy days of the United State Bank, opposed the "gag" rule in Congress upon petitions against slavery, supported the low tariff policy of the Democratic party and opposed its commitments to slavery, stood with the Free Soilers against admission of Texas as a slave state and for indemnity to Mexico, campaigned for an international copyright law, stood by Lincoln and opposed the Copperheads, such as Mayor Fernando Wood, in New York City, favored President Andrew Johnson's mild policies toward the South (though aware of Johnson's unfitness as an executive), supported better housing in slum areas, and approved fire, police and sanitation services.¹¹⁹

Twain's activities were more diversified, for at times emotional whims led him to champion or oppose various causes. His activities, while important, do not seem to have astonishing depth, degree, or distinction.

¹¹⁸Ibid., p. 211.

¹¹⁹Ibid., pp. 211-12.

stood for, "117 and "A list of his attendances reads like
the history of the steps forward in this country."

Pearce continued:

... He supported Andrew Jackson in the campaign of
1827, opposed the private financial interests during
the stormy days of the United States Bank, opposed the
" gag" rule in Congress upon petitions against slavery,
supported the low tariff policy of the Democratic
party and opposed its commitment to slavery, stood
with the freeholders against abolition of taxes on
slave state and for indemnity to Mexico, championed for
an international copyright law, stood by Lincoln and
opposed the Copperheads, such as Henry Fernando Wood,
in New York City, favored President Andrew Johnson's
mild policies toward the South (though aware of John
son's unfitness as an executive), supported Britain
housing in slum areas, and approved Irish, police and
sanitation services. 119

Twain's activities were more diversified, for at times
emotional whims led him to champion or oppose various
causes. His activities, while important, do not seem to
have astonishing depth, degree, or distinction.

118 Ibid., p. 211.

119 Ibid., pp. 211-12.

CHAPTER VIII

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS

I. SUMMARY

Mark Twain has supplied literary critics with a fruitful field for research and discussion. As this thesis has illustrated, Twain's reputation has undergone several major changes. During his lifetime he was considered the "Jolly Joker," but many critics did not accept him as a serious literary artist. In the decade after Twain's death most of the critics continued to rate Twain solely as a humorist. Some critics approved of his humor, while others considered it negligible. Gradually, however, critics began to state that Twain was a serious critic of his times. In 1920 this concept was modified by Van Wyck Brooks who admitted the great satirical potentiality in Twain, but insisted that Twain had been repressed from ever expressing his innate satire. The Brooksian theory, after some early opposition, gradually became more widely accepted, and until 1932 was considered the ultimate in Mark Twain analysis. At that time, however, Bernard DeVoto sharply rebuked Brooks, insisting that Twain had not been repressed, and offered his own theory that Twain, who never became a great satirist because he saw the futility of attempting to

reform mankind, gave American literature tragic laughter in his memorable pictures of the American frontier. Since 1932 Mark Twain criticism has gradually approached a middle ground between Brooks and DeVoto. To this day opposing opinions can, however, be discovered. Some critics believe Twain was a great critic of his times; others hold a nearly opposite viewpoint. Wagenknecht called for a look at the record in any total evaluation of Mark Twain, and it has been the purpose of this thesis not only to show how Twain criticism has developed, but to look at the record in order to determine the extent of Twain's social criticism.

In an evaluation of Mark Twain, Bernard DeVoto once observed, "He is usually to be found on both sides of any question he argues."¹ This has been pointed out in almost every chapter of this thesis. He remained relatively silent about the Mexican and Civil Wars, at first ardently supported the Spanish-American War and then later criticized it with equal vehemence. He gloried in American Westward expansion, but took a two-sided view of foreign imperialistic movements, although he usually sided with the oppressed smaller nations. Critics often speak of Twain's hatred of monarchy, and although some of his anti-monarchical strictures are sharp indeed, Twain was too close, in both

¹Clemens, The Portable Mark Twain, Bernard DeVoto, editor, op. cit., p. 15.

reform mankind, gave American literature tragic laughter in
his memorable pictures of the American frontier. Since
1932 Mark Twain criticism has gradually approached a mid-
dle ground between Brooks and DeVoto. To this day oppos-
ing opinions can, however, be discovered. Some critics
believe Twain was a great critic of his times; others hold
a nearly opposite viewpoint. *Wagnersnacht* called for a look
at the record in any total evaluation of Mark Twain, and it
has been the purpose of this thesis not only to show how
Twain criticism has developed, but to look at the record in
order to determine the extent of Twain's social criticism.
In an evaluation of Mark Twain, Bernard DeVoto once
observed, "He is usually to be found on both sides of any
question he argues."¹ This has been pointed out in almost
every chapter of this thesis. He remained relatively silent
about the Mexican and Civil Wars, at first ardently sup-
ported the Spanish-American War and then later criticized
it with equal vehemence. He gloried in American Westward
expansion, but took a two-sided view of foreign imperial-
istic movements, although he usually sided with the oppressed
smaller nations. Critics often speak of Twain's hatred of
monarchy, and although some of his anti-monarchical satir-
tures are sharp indeed, Twain was too close, in both

¹Clemens, *The Portable Mark Twain*, Bernard DeVoto,
editor, pp. 211, p. 17.

temperament and association, with monarchs to make his criticisms thoroughly convincing. Another popular critical comment concerns Twain's utter lack of belief in progress. This thesis, however, has pointed out that Twain was often enthusiastic about material progress, even though the human heart had not showed much development. Howells, Parrington, and others have asserted that Twain, in his later years, leaned toward the left and away from the greedy nineteenth century capitalism. This theory also seems questionable in light of Twain's constant alignment on the side of the big business men and speculators. Twain did side with the "little people" more often in the question of minority groups. His attitude toward such persecuted people as the Chinese, Indians, Jews, and Negroes was admirable, although he failed to exhibit much social consciousness in perceiving the plight of the American laborer. On the question of politics Twain was again divided. For many years he steadfastly voted the straight Republican ticket; in later life he became an independent. His perception of vital issues, however, was weak. Toward the corruption of the Gilded Age he showed a keen public spirit, but often he criticized minor abuses or failed to see the basic causes of the Great Barbecue.

II. CONCLUSIONS

temperament and an ability to...
criticism...
comment...
This...
enthusiastic...
heart...
and others...
learned...
century...
light...
business...
"little...
groups...
Chinese...
the...
policy...
first...
he...
however...
he...
which...
B......

The writer began this thesis with the a priori idea that Twain was a great social critic. The thesis was intended to back up this assumption, and settle the point for all time. A look at the record shows considerable social criticism in Twain's writings, but also shows that Twain did not act consistently as a critic of his times. A final judgment could be that Twain, at times, did write social criticism which was vehement and heartfelt. However, his ideas were rarely profound, and assuredly his future reputation will not come from his social criticism. As a creative writer he was, at times, great; as a sustained social critic Twain was, at best, mediocre.

Throughout the thesis several reasons have been given for Twain's failure as a social critic. One reason not often mentioned by critics was Twain's disparaging attitude toward reformers. Social criticism is a type of reform movement, and on at least five occasions Twain showed his disgust at popular reform methods.²

²In his Letters, op. cit., II, 803, Twain criticized the dull method of advocating reform for the blind; in "Lionizing Murders," Sketches New and Old, op. cit., pp. 238-43, he pointed out the stupidity and impracticality of much prison reform; in "Edward Mills and George Benton," The \$30,000 Bequest, and Other Stories, op. cit., pp. 209-17, he showed how much reform was wasted on naturally evil persons, while the good people went without help; in "Traveling With a Reformer," Literary Essays, op. cit., pp. 78-99, he depicted the typical reformer as a nuisance to people who wanted to be left alone; and in "A Scrap of Curious History," What Is Man? And Other Essays, op. cit., pp. 182-92, he showed how successful reform was always accompanied with (p. 192) "... riot, insurrection, and the wrack and restitutions of war."

A serious defect of Twain's social criticism was his preoccupation with "little things" or remote incidents. He was infuriated because a cab driver overcharged his servant, but he never attacked the great railroad pirates. He raged at the ill treatment of Filipinos, but never considered the hordes of sweat shop laborers who toiled under American "captains of industry." Ten years after slavery had been abolished, he wrote about pre-war southern Negroes, but he never considered contemporary Negro problems.

Another defect of his social criticism was its tone. Always a perpetual "Youth," Mark Twain was far more emotional than intellectual in his judgments. He formed hasty opinions, was stirred sympathetically by individual instances of suffering but ignored larger abuses, and at times became much too angry for successful criticism. If his sympathies were aroused, he would stubbornly defend a person or principle; if he became angry, he wanted to pound the object of his wrath to a pulp. He had no ability to analyze causes of problems, and was not intellectually equipped to become a profound thinker.

Closely related to the above reason was Twain's genius for comedy. Time after time he began a satire which had great promise, but concluded with wild burlesque. Perhaps a good example of this was his Connecticut Yankee. Possessing some excellent satire, the story nevertheless loses much

A serious defect of Taine's social criticism was his preoccupation with "little things" or remote incidents. He was infuriated because a cab driver overcharged his service but he never attacked the French railroad system. He raged at the ill treatment of Negroes, but never considered the horde of sweat shop laborers who toiled under American "captains of industry." Ten years after slavery had been abolished, he wrote about pre-war southern Negroes, but he never considered contemporary Negro problems.

Another defect of his social criticism was its tone. Always a perpetual "Youth," Mark Taine was far more emotion- at than intellect in his judgments. He formed hasty opinions, was stirred sympathetically by individual instances of suffering but ignored larger abuses, and at times became more and more angry for successful criticism. If his sympathies were aroused, he would stubbornly defend a person or principle; if he became angry, he wanted to pound the object of his wrath to a pulp. He had no ability to analyze causes of problems, and was not intellectually equipped to become a profound thinker.

Closely related to the above reason was Taine's genuine for comedy. Time after time he began a satire which had great promise, but concluded with wild burlesque. Perhaps a good example of this was his Contemporary France. Possessing some excellent satire, the story nevertheless loses much

of its impact because of the burlesque. When the knights pedal to the rescue on their bicycles, the preceding chapters are almost ruined. Twain's genius for true comedy also hampered his social criticism. He started out to make his part of *The Gilded Age* a cutting satire on American life. Colonel Sellers was to be the vehicle for much of this satire, but Twain created one of his greatest comic characters--so great that many effects of the intended satire were irrevocably lost. Many passages in which Tom Sawyer, Huck Finn, and the Negro Jim appear also have their social criticism masked by pure comedy. The American public's insistence upon reading humor into Twain's works also deterred him from serious criticism. "I suppose it's my own fault," he once said wistfully. "I've cried 'wolf' so often and then led in a monkey that now when I try to write seriously everybody is sure I am only shamming."³

Still another reason why Twain did not become a great social critic was his attitude toward the contemporary scene. He was far more a product of his age than a protest against it. A true Colonel Sellers at heart, he was an industrial pioneer who saw "the vision of the possibility of things." All through his life he looked for schemes with "millions in them," and had he been blessed with a keen financial

³J. R. Clemens, "Some Reminiscences of Mark Twain," *Overland Monthly*, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 125.

of its impact because of the business. When the lights
paled to the reason on their faces, the preceding chap-
ters are almost ruined. Twain's genius for true comedy
also hampered his social criticism. He started out to
make his part of the Gilded Age a cutting satire on American
life. Colonel Sellers was to be the vehicle for much of
this satire, but Twain crossed one of his greatest comic
characters--so great that many effects of the intended sat-
ire were irretrievably lost. Many passages in which Twain
satirized Mark Twain, and the Negro his agent also have been
social criticism washed by pure comedy. The American pub-
lic's resistance upon reading humor into Twain's words also
deterred him from serious criticism. "I suppose it's my
own fault," he once said wistfully. "I've tried 'well' so
often and then led in a monkey that now when I try to write
seriously everybody is sure I am only chattering."
Still another reason why Twain did not become a great
social critic was his attitude toward the contemporary scene.
He was far more a product of his age than a protest against
it. A true Colonel Sellers at heart, he was an industrial
pioneer who saw "the vision of the possibility of things."
All through his life he looked for schemes with "millions
in them," and had he been blessed with a keen financial

sense and a cold heart, Mark Twain would have been another Morgan or Vanderbilt and had the biggest plate at the Barbecue.

His increasing pessimism was also important in deterring him from serious social criticism. In his avid readings of ancient and medieval history he observed that human beings had exhibited remarkably little moral progress. If the human race really was morally stationary, then why try futilely to improve people? Undoubtedly an attempt to improve society is far more noble than the adoption of a do-nothing attitude, but the temptation is always strong to take the easy way out. The causes of Twain's pessimism have been argued by many critics, but it is not the purpose of this thesis to enter the controversy. Perhaps it was Twain's doubts about a hereafter that caused his black despair; whatever the cause, his pessimism did become extremely strong, and in light of such despair it is to Twain's credit that he produced any social criticism at all.

A final reason why he never became a great social critic was his expediency in almost all aspects of life. Reform and progress have always required strong hearts. Charles A. Madison mentioned this in his description of American progress:

Each of these gains was achieved only after a long and bitter struggle. Men and women fought for them

step by step, year after year, usually at great personal sacrifice. Driven by zeal of conscience and by a strong social idealism, these reformers and crusaders dedicated their lives to the greater good of all the people.⁴

Mark Twain never exhibited this degree of moral courage. He was not Captain Ahab, but Starbuck; nor was he Taji who spurned Serenia for the uncertainty of the Ideal to be found in the open sea. Whenever the criticism of certain aspects of American life could possibly work to the financial or social detriment of himself and his family, Twain avoided the controversy. He is not to be condemned for protecting his own interests instead of acting on behalf of humanity, for such a course of action is not, in all instances, wrong. This attitude, however, is not conducive to courageous social criticism.

If Twain was not a great social critic, what, then was he, and what were his achievements? In the opinion of this writer, Mark Twain was three things: a humorist, a recorder of American life, and a critic of the human race. Twain's humor was often mere burlesque, but certain passages of his better comedy will undoubtedly live, as Twain said, for several generations--then will start anew and live another five hundred years. His humor needs no defense; certain pseudo-intellectuals seem afraid to admit the comic spirit in Twain,

⁴Madison, op. cit., p. viii.

step by step, year after year, usually at great personal sacrifice. But when the year of sacrifice and of a strong social idealism, these reformers and idealists dedicated their lives to the greater good of all the people.

Mark Twain never exhibited this degree of moral courage. He was not Captain Jack, nor Starnes; nor was he like the apostle for the uncertainty of the ideal to be found in the open sea. Whenever the criticism of certain aspects of American life could possibly work to the financial or social detriment of himself and his family, Twain avoided the controversy. He is not to be condemned for protecting his own interests instead of acting on behalf of humanity, for such a course of action is not, in all instances, wrong. This attitude, however, is not conducive to courageous social criticism.

If Twain was not a great social critic, what then was he, and what were his achievements? In the opinion of this writer, Mark Twain was three things: a humorist, a critic of American life, and a critic of the human race. Twain's humor was often more barbed than that of certain passages of his better comedy will undoubtedly live, as Twain said, for several generations--then will start anew and live another five hundred years. His humor needs no defense; certain passages of his criticism seem afraid to admit the comic spirit in Twain.

but that group is, happily, in the minority. Some of Twain's pictures of American life will also live for generations. Tom Sawyer, Huckleberry Finn, Pudd'nhead Wilson, and parts of Roughing It and Life on the Mississippi need no signposts to point out the indelible pictures of the Mississippi Valley and Rocky Mountain West. Howells once wished he had been on "that raft," but there are few red-blooded readers who have not been "on" the raft. This writer has never been in Hannibal, Missouri, and never particularly wishes to go there; any sightseeing around those old landmarks--Jackson's Island, Cardiff Hill, and all the others--would spoil the clear mental picture formed from many readings in Twain's works.

Mark Twain was also a keen critic of the human race. Perhaps the distinction between criticism of social conditions and criticism of the human race seems slight, but there is a difference. Criticism of the human race is not restricted to any place, time, or specific institution. Twain was not a great diagnostician of political, economic, and sociological movements, but on many occasions he was a keen critic of the human heart. Many of the evils depicted in "The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg," Pudd'nhead Wilson, The Mysterious Stranger, and Huckleberry Finn are timeless, and will help make those stories live on in literature. Another thesis could be written about Twain's criticism of

but that group is, happily, in the minority. Some of Twain's

pictures of American life will also live for generations.

Tom Sawyer, Huckleberry Finn, Gold'shead Wilson, and parts

of Huckleberry Finn and Life on the Mississippi need no allegories

to point out the indelible pictures of the Mississippi Valley.

lay and Rocky Mountain West. Twain's once wished he had been

on "that raft," but there are few red-blooded readers who

have not been "on" the raft. This writer has never heard of

Hannibal, Missouri, and never particularly wished to go there.

any righteousness around those old landmarks--Jackson's is-

land, Cardiff Hill, and all the others--would spoil the

clear mental picture formed from many readings of Twain's

works.

Mark Twain was also a keen critic of the human race.

Perhaps the distinction between criticism of social con-

ditions and criticism of the human race seems slight, but

there is a difference. Criticism of the human race is not

restricted to any place, time, or specific institution.

Twain was not a great diagnostician of political, economic,

and sociological movements, but on many occasions he was a

keen critic of the human heart. Many of the evils depicted

in "The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg," Gold'shead Wilson,

The Mysterious Stranger, and Huckleberry Finn are timeless,

and will help make those who live on in literature.

Another thesis could be written about Twain's criticism of

the human race, and it is the hope of this writer that he may be enabled, at some future time, to do so. Mark Twain's amazing inconsistency has made this study exceptionally interesting, and a fitting conclusion is a quotation from Gamaliel Bradford:

For . . . years I read little of him. Now, leaping over that considerable gulf, reading and re-reading old and new together, to distil the essence of his soul in a brief portrait, has been for me a wild revel, a riot of laughter and criticism and prejudice and anti-prejudice and revolt and rapture, from which it seems as if no sane and reasoned judgment could ensue. Perhaps none has.⁵

⁵Bradford, op. cit., p. 3.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

THE CONTENT
OF THE BOND
AND THE BOND

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. BOOKS BY MARK TWAIN

Clemens, Samuel Langhorne, The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1931. 447 pp.

_____, The American Claimant, and Other Stories and Sketches. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1899. 397 pp.

_____, Christian Science. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907. 264 pp.

_____, The Favorite Works of Mark Twain. Garden City: Garden City Publishing Company, 1939. 1178 pp. Includes Tom Sawyer, Life on the Mississippi, and A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court.

_____, Following The Equator, A Journey Around The World. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1925. 2 vols., 699 pp.

_____, and Charles Dudley Warner, The Gilded Age, A Tale of Today. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1915. 2 vols., 657 pp.

_____, How to Tell a Story, and Other Essays. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1905. 233 pp.

_____, Innocents Abroad. Hartford: American Publishing Company, 1872. 651 pp.

_____, King Leopold's Soliloquy, A Defense of His Congo Rule. Boston: The P. R. Warren Company, 1905. 56 pp.

_____, The Letters of Quintus Curtius Snodgrass. Ernest E. Leisy, editor; Dallas: Southern Methodist University Press, 1946. 76 pp.

_____, Literary Essays. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1918. 405 pp.

_____, The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917. 365 pp.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. BOOKS BY MARK TWAIN

- Clemens, Samuel Langhorne, The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1911. 447 pp.
- Sketches. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1899. 397 pp.
- The American Claimant, and Other Stories and Sketches. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1907. 264 pp.
- Christian Science. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907. 264 pp.
- The Favorite Works of Mark Twain. Garden City: Garden City Publishing Company, 1930. 1178 pp. In-cludes Tom Sawyer, Life on the Mississippi, and A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court.
- Following the Equator, A Journey Around the World. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1929. 2 vols., 699 pp.
- and Charles Dudley Warner, The Gilded Age, A Tale of Today. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917. 2 vols., 657 pp.
- How to Tell a Story, and Other Essays. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1905. 233 pp.
- Innocent Abroad. Hartford: American Publishing Company, 1892. 651 pp.
- King Leobold's Soliloquy, A Defense of His Conduct. Boston: The F. R. Warren Company, 1905. 78 pp.
- The Letters of Quintus Curtius Reuchlin. Ernest E. Lohr, editor; Dallas: Southern Methodist University Press, 1946. 78 pp.
- Literary Essays. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1918. 405 pp.
- The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, and Other Essays and Stories. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917. 368 pp.

- _____, Mark Twain, Business Man. Samuel Charles Webster, editor; Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1946. 409 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain in Eruption. Bernard DeVoto, editor; New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1940. 402 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain, Representative Selections. Fred Lewis Pattee, editor; The American Writers Series, Harry Hayden Clark, general editor; New York: American Book Company, 1935. 459 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's Autobiography. Albert Bigelow Paine, editor; New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1924. 2 vols., 733 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's Letters. Albert Bigelow Paine, editor; New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917. 2 vols., 856 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's Letters to Will Bowen. Theodore Hornberger, editor; Austin: University of Texas Press, 1941. 34 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's Notebook. Albert Bigelow Paine, editor; New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1935. 413 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's Speeches. Albert Bigelow Paine, editor; New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1923.
- _____, Personal Recollections of Joan of Arc. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1899. 2 vols., 597 pp.
- _____, The Portable Mark Twain. Bernard DeVoto, editor; New York: The Viking Press, 1946. 786 pp. Includes The Mysterious Stranger.
- _____, The Prince and the Pauper. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1921. 281 pp.
- _____, The Private Life of Adam and Eve; Being Extracts From Their Diaries. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1906. 198 pp.
- _____, Pudd'nhead Wilson, and Those Extraordinary Twins. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1922. 295 pp.
- _____, Roughing It. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1913. 2 vols., 692 pp.

- _____, Sketches New and Old. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1903. 424 pp.
- _____, The \$30,000 Bequest, and Other Stories. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917. 383 pp.
- _____, Tom Sawyer Abroad, Tom Sawyer Detective, and Other Stories. New York: P. F. Collier and Son Company, 1917. 452 pp.
- _____, A Tramp Abroad. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1907. 2 vols., 581 pp.
- _____, What Is Man? And Other Essays. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1917. 376 pp.

B. PERIODICAL ARTICLES BY MARK TWAIN

- Clemens, Samuel Langhorne, "Curious Legislation and Vinnie Ream," The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1943), 10-11.
- _____, "A Defence of General Funston," North American Review, CLXXIV (May, 1902), 613-24.
- _____, "The Evidence in the Case of Smith Vs. Jones," The Wit and Humor of America. Marshall P. Wilder, editor; New York and London: Funk and Wagnalls Company, 1911, X, 1918-26.
- _____, "Extract from Captain Stormfield's Visit to Heaven," Harper's Monthly Magazine, CXVI (December, 1907, and January, 1908), 41-49, 266-76.
- _____, "A Horse's Tale," Harper's Monthly Magazine, CXIII (August and September, 1906), 327-42, 539-49.
- _____, "The Hunted Chief in His Castle," The Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Summer, 1942), 14.
- _____, "Letter from the Recording Angel," Harper's Magazine, CXCII (February, 1946), 106-9.
- _____, "The Love Letters of Mark Twain," Dixon Weeter, editor; Atlantic Monthly, CLXXX (November, 1947), 33-39.
- _____, "Passage from Outlines of History," Bernard DeVoto, editor; The Saturday Review of Literature, XIX (December 10, 1938), 4.

_____, Excelsior, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The \$50,000 Redoubt, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, Tom Sawyer, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, A French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, There is Love in Every Heart, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, The French Boy, New York, 1907. 1 vol., 120 pp.

_____, "The Tsar's Soliloquy," North American Review,
CLXXX (March, 1905), 321-26.

C. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: BOOKS

Beers, Henry A., Initial Studies in American Literature.
Meadville, Pennsylvania: The Chautauqua-Century Press,
1895. 291 pp.

Benson, Ivan, Mark Twain's Western Years. Palo Alto, Calif-
ornia: Stanford University Press, 1938. 218 pp.

Blair, Walter, Horse Sense in American Humor. Chicago:
University of Chicago Press, 1942. 341 pp.

Blankenship, Russell, American Literature As An Expression
Of The National Mind. New York: Henry Holt and Company,
1931. 731 pp.

Boynton, Percy H., A History of American Literature. Boston:
Ginn and Company, 1919. 513 pp.

Bradford, Gamaliel, American Portraits 1875-1900. Boston and
New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1936. 249 pp.

Brashear, Minnie M., Mark Twain, Son of Missouri. Chapel Hill:
University of North Carolina Press, 1934. 294 pp.

Bronson, Walter C., A Short History of American Literature.
Boston: D. C. Heath and Company, 1919. 490 pp.

Brooks, Van Wyck, The Ordeal of Mark Twain. New York: E. P.
Dutton and Company, 1920. 267 pp.

_____, The Ordeal of Mark Twain, new and revised edition.
New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1933. 325 pp.

_____, The Times of Melville and Whitman. New York: E. P.
Dutton and Company, 1947. 489 pp.

Cain, James M., Past All Dishonor. New York: The New
American Library, 1948. 144 pp.

Cairns, William B., A History of American Literature. New
York: Oxford University Press, 1930. 569 pp.

Calverton, V. F., The Liberation of American Literature. New
York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1932. 500 pp.

Clark (March, 1907), 21-22.
The Year's Collection, North American Review.

C. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM BOOKS

Beers, Henry A., Initial Studies in American Literature.
Knoxville, Tennessee: The University of Tennessee Press, 1907. 201 pp.

Benson, Ivan, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Blair, Walter, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Blanchard, Susan, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Brown, Henry A., History of American Literature. Boston and New York: 1910. 212 pp.

Brundage, Samuel, American Literature. Boston and New York: 1910. 212 pp.

Bushman, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Bushman, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Bushman, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Bushman, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Bushman, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Cain, James M., Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Calvin, William, Early English Literature. 2 vols. 1910. 212 pp.

Calverton, W. F., The Literature of American Literature. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1910. 212 pp.

- Cargill, Oscar, The Social Revolt in American Literature 1888-1933. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1933. 649 pp.
- Devol, George H., Forty Years a Gambler on the Mississippi. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1926. 288 pp.
- DeVoto, Bernard, Forays and Rebuttals. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1936. 403 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain at Work. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1942. 144 pp.
- _____, Mark Twain's America. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1932. 353 pp.
- Erskine, John, Leading American Novelists. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1910. 378 pp.
- Ferguson, John DeLancey, Mark Twain: Man and Legend. New York: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1943. 352 pp.
- Frank, Waldo, Our America. New York: Boni and Liveright, 1919. 232 pp.
- Frear, Walter Francis, Mark Twain and Hawaii. Chicago: Lakeside Press, 1947. 519 pp. Includes complete letters by Twain from Hawaii to the Sacramento Union.
- Halleck, Reuben Post, History of American Literature. New York: American Book Company, 1911. 431 pp.
- Haney, John Louis, The Story of our Literature. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1923. 399 pp.
- Hazard, Lucy Lockwood, The Frontier in American Literature. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1927. 308 pp.
- Hicks, Granville, The Great Tradition, An Interpretation of American Literature Since the Civil War. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1933. 317 pp.
- Howells, William Dean, My Mark Twain. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1910. 187 pp.
- Johnson, Merle DeVore, A Bibliography of the Works of Mark Twain. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1935. 274 pp.

- Kellner, Leon, American Literature. Julia Franklin, translator; Garden City: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1915. 254 pp.
- Knight, Grant C., American Literature and Culture. New York: Ray Long and Richard R. Smith, Inc., 1932. 523 pp.
- Lawton, Mary, A Lifetime With Mark Twain, The Memories of Katy Leary, for Thirty Years his Faithful and Devoted Servant. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1925. 352 pp.
- Leisy, Ernest Erwin, American Literature, An Interpretive Survey. New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1929. 299 pp.
- Lewisohn, Ludwig, Expression in America. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1932. 624 pp.
- Mack, Effie Mona, Mark Twain in Nevada. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1947. 398 pp.
- Macy, John, The Spirit of American Literature. New York: The Modern Library, 1913. 347 pp.
- Madison, Charles A., Critics and Crusaders, A Century of American Protest. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1947. 572 pp.
- Masters, Edgar Lee, Mark Twain, A Portrait. New York and London: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1938. 259 pp.
- Matthews, Brander, An Introduction to the Study of American Literature. New York: American Book Company, 1896. 256 pp.
- Morison, Samuel Eliot, and Henry Steele Commager, The Growth of the American Republic. New York: Oxford University Press, 1942. 2 vols., 1520 pp.
- Mumford, Lewis, The Golden Day. New York: Horace Liveright, Inc., 1926. 283 pp.
- Pace, Roy Bennett, American Literature. Boston: Allyn and Bacon, 1926. 451 pp.
- Paine, Albert Bigelow, Mark Twain, A Biography. New York and London: Harper and Brothers, 1912. 3 vols., 1719 pp.

Kellner, Louis. Handbook of the ...
later, London: ...
224 pp.

Knight, Robert. ...
Ray, ...

Lawson, Mary. ...
...
322 pp.

Leary, Ernest. ...
...
327 pp.

Lewisohn, Robert. ...
...
328 pp.

Mack, Little. ...
...
329 pp.

Macy, John. ...
...
330 pp.

Mason, Charles A. ...
...
331 pp.

Mester, Robert. ...
...
332 pp.

Mitchell, Robert. ...
...
333 pp.

Morton, Robert. ...
...
334 pp.

Murphy, Robert. ...
...
335 pp.

Nice, Roy. ...
...
336 pp.

Palme, Robert. ...
...
337 pp.

- Pancoast, Henry S., An Introduction to American Literature. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1898. 393 pp.
- Parkes, Henry Bamford, The American Experience. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1947. 343 pp.
- Parrington, Vernon Louis, Main Currents in American Thought. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1930. Vol. III, 429 pp.
- Parrington, Vernon Louis, Jr., American Dreams, A Study of American Utopias. Providence, Rhode Island: Brown University Press, 1947. 234 pp.
- Pattee, Fred Lewis, A History of American Literature Since 1870. New York: The Century Company, 1915. 448 pp.
- Pearce, Thomas M., Democracy in Progress. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 1943. 368 pp.
- Perry, Bliss, The American Spirit in Literature. Vol. XXXIV, 281 pp. Allen Johnson, editor: The Chronicles of America Series, 50 vols.; New Haven: Yale University Press, 1918-1921.
- Phelps, William Lyon, Essays on Modern Novelists. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1912. 293 pp.
- _____, Some Makers of American Literature. Boston: Marshall Jones Company, 1923. 187 pp.
- Rourke, Constance, American Humor, A Study of the National Character. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1931. 324 pp.
- Sherman, Stuart P., On Contemporary Literature. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1917. 312 pp.
- Simonds, William Edward, A Student's History of American Literature. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1909. 383 pp.
- Spiller, Robert E., and others, Literary History of the United States. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1948. Vol. 3, 817 pp.
- Stovall, Floyd, American Idealism. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1943. 235 pp.

Parsons, Henry S., An Introduction to American Literature. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1927. 323 pp.

Parsons, Henry S., The American Renaissance. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1947. 343 pp.

Partington, Vernon Louis, Main Currents in American Thought. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1930. Vol. I, 111, 429 pp.

Partington, Vernon Louis, Jr., American Progress: A Study of American Thought. Providence, Rhode Island: Brown University Press, 1947. 234 pp.

Patterson, Fred Lewis, A History of American Literature Since 1870. New York: The Century Company, 1917. 448 pp.

Pearce, Thomas W., Democracy in Literature. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 1947. 308 pp.

Perry, Bliss, The American Spirit in Literature. Vol. XXXIV, 281 pp. Allen Johnson, editor. The Chronicles of America Series, 50 vols.; New Haven: Yale University Press, 1918-1921.

Phelps, William Lyon, Essays on Modern Novelists. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1912. 222 pp.

_____, Some Masters of American Literature. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1923. 107 pp.

Rennie, Constance, American Humor: A Study of the National Character. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1931. 324 pp.

Sherman, Stuart S., On Contemporary Literature. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1917. 312 pp.

Simonds, William Edwards, A Student's History of American Literature. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1909. 363 pp.

Spliller, Robert H., and others, Literary History of the United States. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1927. Vol. 3, 817 pp.

Stowell, Floyd, American Idealism. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1943. 232 pp.

- Taylor, Walter Fuller, The Economic Novel in America. Chapel Hill: The University of North Carolina Press, 1942. 378 pp.
- Thorp, Willard, Merle Curti, and Carlos Baker, American Issues. Chicago, Philadelphia, and New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1941. 1035 pp.
- Trent, William Peterfield, and John Erskine, Great American Writers. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1912. 256 pp.
- _____, and others, The Cambridge History of American Literature. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1917-21. Vol. 3, 424 pp.
- Van Doren, Carl, The American Novel. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1921. 295 pp.
- _____, The American Novel 1789-1939. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1946. 406 pp.
- Vincent, Leon H., American Literary Masters. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1906. 518 pp.
- Wagenknecht, Edward, Mark Twain, The Man and His Work. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1935. 301 pp.
- Watkins, Mildred Cabell, American Literature. New York: American Book Company, 1894. 224 pp.
- Woodberry, George Edward, Appreciation of Literature and America in Literature. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 306 pp.
- _____, Literary Memoirs of the Nineteenth Century. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 320 pp.
- _____, Studies of a Litterateur. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 328 pp.
- Wright, William, The Big Bonanza. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1947. 439 pp.

D. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: PERIODICAL ARTICLES

- Alden, Henry M., "Mark Twain--An Appreciation," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 366-69.

Taylor, Walter Elliot, The Economic Novel in America. Chapel Hill: The University of North Carolina Press, 1942. 328 pp.

Thorp, Willard, Marie Gurti, and Carlos Baker, American Literature. Chicago, Philadelphia, and New York: J. B. Lippincott Company, 1941. 1035 pp.

Trent, William Peterfield, and John F. Johnston, Great American Writers. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1917. 250 pp.

_____, and others, The Cambridge History of American Literature. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1917-21. Vol. 3. 454 pp.

Van Doren, Carl, The American Novel. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1921. 297 pp.

_____, The American Novel 1789-1919. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1946. 406 pp.

Vincent, Leon W., American Literary Masters. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1908. 518 pp.

Waggoner, Edward, Mark Twain, The Man and His Work. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1935. 301 pp.

Watkins, Mildred Capell, American Literature. New York: American Book Company, 1907. 224 pp.

Woodberry, George Edward, Appreciation of Literature and American Literature. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 306 pp.

_____, Literary Movements of the Nineteenth Century. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 320 pp.

_____, Studies of a Literature. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1921. 320 pp.

Wright, William, The Old English. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1927. 432 pp.

D. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: PERIODICAL ARTICLES

Alden, Henry W., "Mark Twain--An Appreciation," The Bookman XXI (June, 1910), 366-69.

Arvin, Newton, "Mark Twain: 1835-1935," The New Republic, LXXXVIII (June 12, 1935), 125-27.

_____, "Mark Twain Simplified," The New Republic, LXXII (October 5, 1932), 211-12.

Binsse, Harry Lorin, "Mark Twain's America," The Bookman, LXXV (October, 1932), 629-30.

"Books in Brief," The Forum, LXXXVIII (December, 1932), viii-ix.

Brooks, Noah, "Mark Twain in California," Century, XXXV n.s. (November, 1898), 97-99.

Browne, J. Ross, "A Peep at Washoe," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XXII (December, 1860, January and February, 1861), 1-17, 145-62, 289-305.

Burton, Richard, "The Mystery of Personality," The Bookman, LII (January, 1921), 333-37.

Chapman, John W., "The Germ of a Book," The Atlantic Monthly, CL (December, 1932), 720-21.

"Chronicle and Comment," The Bookman, XII (January, 1901), 441-42.

Clemens, Cyril, "Mark Twain: 1835-1910," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 103-4.

_____, "A Visit to Mark Twain's Country," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 116-17, 127.

Clemens, J. R., "Some Reminiscences of Mark Twain," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 105-125.

Colum, Mary M., "The Misunderstood Jester," The Forum, XCIV (November, 1935), 277-78.

Compton, Charles H., "Who Reads Mark Twain?" American Mercury, XXXI (April, 1934), 465-71.

Cowie, Alexander, "Mark Twain Controls Himself," American Literature, X (January, 1939), 488-91.

DeVoto, Bernard, "Mark Twain: A Caricature," The Saturday Review of Literature, XVII (March 19, 1938), 5.

- _____, "The Mark Twain Papers," The Saturday Review of Literature, XIX (December 10, 1938), 3-4, 14-15.
- _____, "The Matrix of Mark Twain's Humor," The Bookman, LXXIV (October, 1931), 172-78.
- _____, "The Real Frontier," Harper's Magazine, CLXIII (June, 1931), 60-71.
- Dreiser, Theodore, "Mark The Double Twain," The English Journal, XXIV (October, 1935), 615-27.
- Edison, Thomas Alva, "Excerpt from a Letter by Thomas Alva Edison to Cyril Clemens," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1929), 102.
- Gay, Robert M., "The Two Mark Twains," The Atlantic Monthly, CLXVI (December, 1940), 724-26.
- Gibson, William M., "Mark Twain and Howells: Anti Imperialists," The New England Quarterly, XX (December, 1947), 435-70.
- Howe, M. A. DeWolfe, "Bret Harte and Mark Twain in the Seventies--Passages from the Diaries of Mrs. James T. Fields," Atlantic Monthly, CXXX (September, 1922), 341-48.
- Howells, William Dean, "Editor's Study," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, LXXX (January, 1890), 319-21.
- Howgate, George W., "The Essential Santayana," Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Winter and Spring, 1942), 7-18.
- Hutton, Laurence, "Literary Notes," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XCIII (June, 1896), 1-2.
- Johnson, Alvin, "The Tragedy of Mark Twain," The New Republic, XXIII (July, 1920), 201-3.
- King, Frederick A., "The Story of Mark Twain's Debts," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 394-96.
- Lorch, Fred W., "Mark Twain and the 'Campaign That Failed,'" American Literature, XII (January, 1941), 454-70.
- _____, "Mark Twain's Trip to Humboldt in 1861," American Literature, X (November, 1938), 343-49.
- Lovett, Robert Morss, "Mark Twain the American," The New Republic, LXXXV (November 20, 1935), 50-51.

- _____, "The Mark Twain Papers," The Saturday Review of Literature, XIX (December 10, 1933), 3-4, 14-15.
- _____, "The Matrix of Mark Twain's Humor," The Bookman, LXIV (October, 1931), 172-78.
- _____, "The Real Frontier," Harper's Magazine, CLXIII (June, 1931), 60-71.
- Dreiser, Theodore, "Mark Twain's Double-Talk," The English Journal, XLIV (October, 1932), 612-27.
- Eaton, Thomas Alva, "Excerpt from a letter by Thomas Alva Eaton to Cyril Clemens," Overland Monthly, LXXXVII (April, 1923), 102.
- Gay, Robert M., "The Two Mark Twains," The Atlantic Monthly, CLXVI (December, 1940), 724-26.
- Gibson, William M., "Mark Twain and Howells: And Impoverished," The New England Quarterly, XX (December, 1947), 432-70.
- Howe, H. A. DeWolf, "Brief History and Mark Twain in the Seventies--Passages from the Diary of Mrs. James T. Fields," Atlantic Monthly, CLXX (November, 1932), 341-44.
- Howells, William Dean, "Editor's Study," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, LXXX (January, 1900), 312-21.
- Horsgate, George F., "The Essential Controversy," Mark Twain Quarterly, V (Winter and Spring, 1942), 7-16.
- Hutton, Lawrence, "Literary Notes," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XCIII (June, 1896), 1-2.
- Johnson, Alvin, "The Tragedy of Mark Twain," The New Republic, XXIII (July, 1920), 201-3.
- King, Frederick A., "The Story of Mark Twain's Debt," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 304-06.
- Lorch, Fred K., "Mark Twain and the 'Campaign That Failed,'" American Literature, XII (January, 1941), 454-70.
- _____, "Mark Twain's Trip to Lumboldt in 1861," American Literature, X (November, 1938), 243-46.
- Lovett, Robert M., "Mark Twain the American," The New Republic, LXXXV (November 20, 1937), 50-51.

- "Mark Twain as a Serious Force in Literature," Current Literature, XLVIII (June, 1910), 663-67.
- "Mark Twain's New Book, A Satirical Attack on English Institutions," The Review of Reviews, I (February, 1890), 144-45.
- Matthiessen, F. O., "Twain into Clemens," The New Republic, CVII (August 10, 1942), 179.
- Millard, Bailey, "Mark Twain in San Francisco," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 369-73.
- Mumford, Lewis, "Prophet, Pedant and Pioneer," The Saturday Review of Literature, IX (May 6, 1933), 573-75.
- Pattee, Fred Lewis, "On the Rating of Mark Twain," American Mercury, XIV (June, 1928), 183-91.
- Peck, Harry Thurston, "Mark Twain A Century Hence," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 382-93.
- Phelps, William Lyon, "Mark Twain," The Yale Review, XXIX n.s. (December, 1935), 291-310.
- _____, "Mark Twain Chief of Sinners," The New York Times Book Review and Magazine (June 27, 1920), 1-2.
- Rideing, William H., "Mark Twain in Clubland," The Bookman, XXXI (June, 1910), 379-82.
- Spiller, Robert E., "The Times of Melville and Whitman," American Literature, XX (January, 1949), 459-61.
- Stewart, George R., "Bret Harte Upon Mark Twain in 1866," American Literature, XIII (November, 1941), 263-64.
- Stockton, Frank R., "Mark Twain and his Recent Works," Forum, XV (August, 1893), 673-77.
- "Taming Mark Twain," The Literary Digest, LXVII (November 13, 1920), 34.
- Taylor, Walter Fuller, "Mark Twain and the Machine Age," South Atlantic Quarterly, XXXVII (October, 1938), 384-96.
- Twitchell, Joseph, "Mark Twain," Harper's New Monthly Magazine, XCII (May, 1896), 817-27.

Mark Twain and his contemporaries - 1880-1890
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

EXTRA BOND

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890
Mark Twain, 1835-1910
Reviews: 1880-1890

Van Doren, Mark, "DeVoto's America," The Nation, CXXXV (October 19, 1932), 370-71.

Vogelback, Arthur L., "Mark Twain: Newspaper Contributor," American Literature, XX (May, 1948), 111-28.

_____, "The Publication and Reception of Huckleberry Finn in America," American Literature, XI (November, 1939), 260-72.

Webster, Doris, and Samuel Webster, "Whitewashing Jane Clemens," The Bookman, LXI (July, 1925), 531-35.

"The Week," Nation, XC (June, 1910), 645-46.

Wister, Owen, "In Homage to Mark Twain," Harper's Monthly Magazine, CLXXI (October, 1935), 547-56.

Wyatt, Edith, "An Inspired Critic," North American Review, CCV (April, 1917), 603-15.

E. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: ESSAYS

Anderson, Sherwood, "Ohio: I'll Say We've Done Well," In Search of America. Lucy Lockwood Hazard, editor; New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1930. pp. 201-8.

Crothers, Samuel McChord, "The Hibernation of Genius," The Dame School of Experience and Other Papers. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1920. pp. 214-31.

Grattan, C. Hartley, "Mark Twain," American Writers on American Literature. John Macy, editor; New York: Horace Liveright Inc., 1931. pp. 274-84.

Waples, Dorothy, "The Middle West Finds a Voice: Mark Twain," The Culture of the Middle West, Lawrence College Faculty Lecture Series. Appleton, Wisconsin: Lawrence College Press, 1944. pp. 40-56.

F. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: ENCYCLOPEDIA ARTICLES

Van Doren, Carl, "Mark Twain," Dictionary of American Biography. Allen Johnson and Dumas Malone, editors; New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1930. IV, 192-98.

Van Doren, Carl, "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Von Knebel, Arthur, "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

"The Book," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

Wells, H. G., "The American Novel," The American, 1925, 1:1-12.

G. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM: NEWSPAPERS

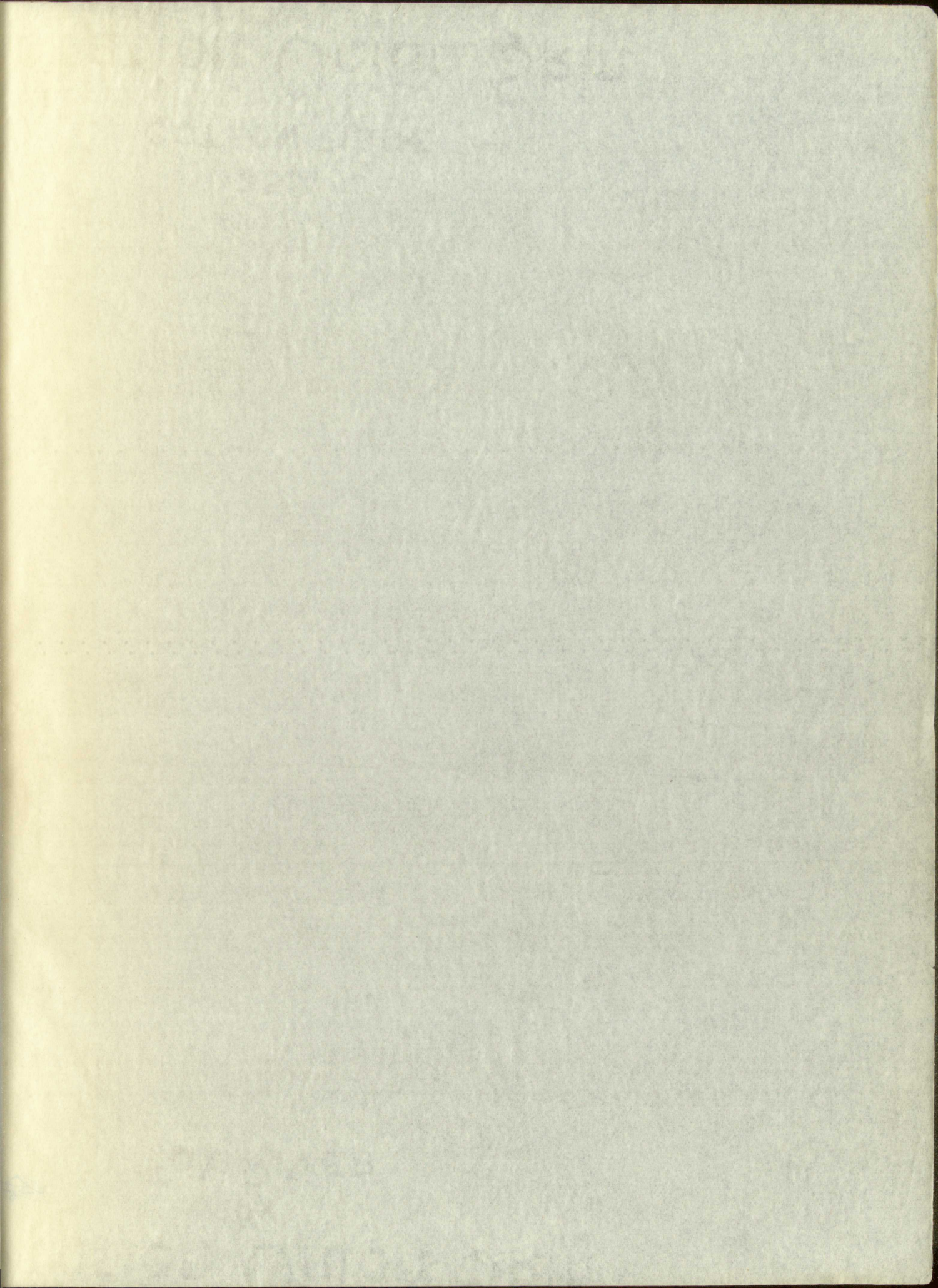
Frank, Jack, "Sin or Scenery," Rocky Mountain Empire Magazine Supplement, Denver Post (November 7, 1948), 5.

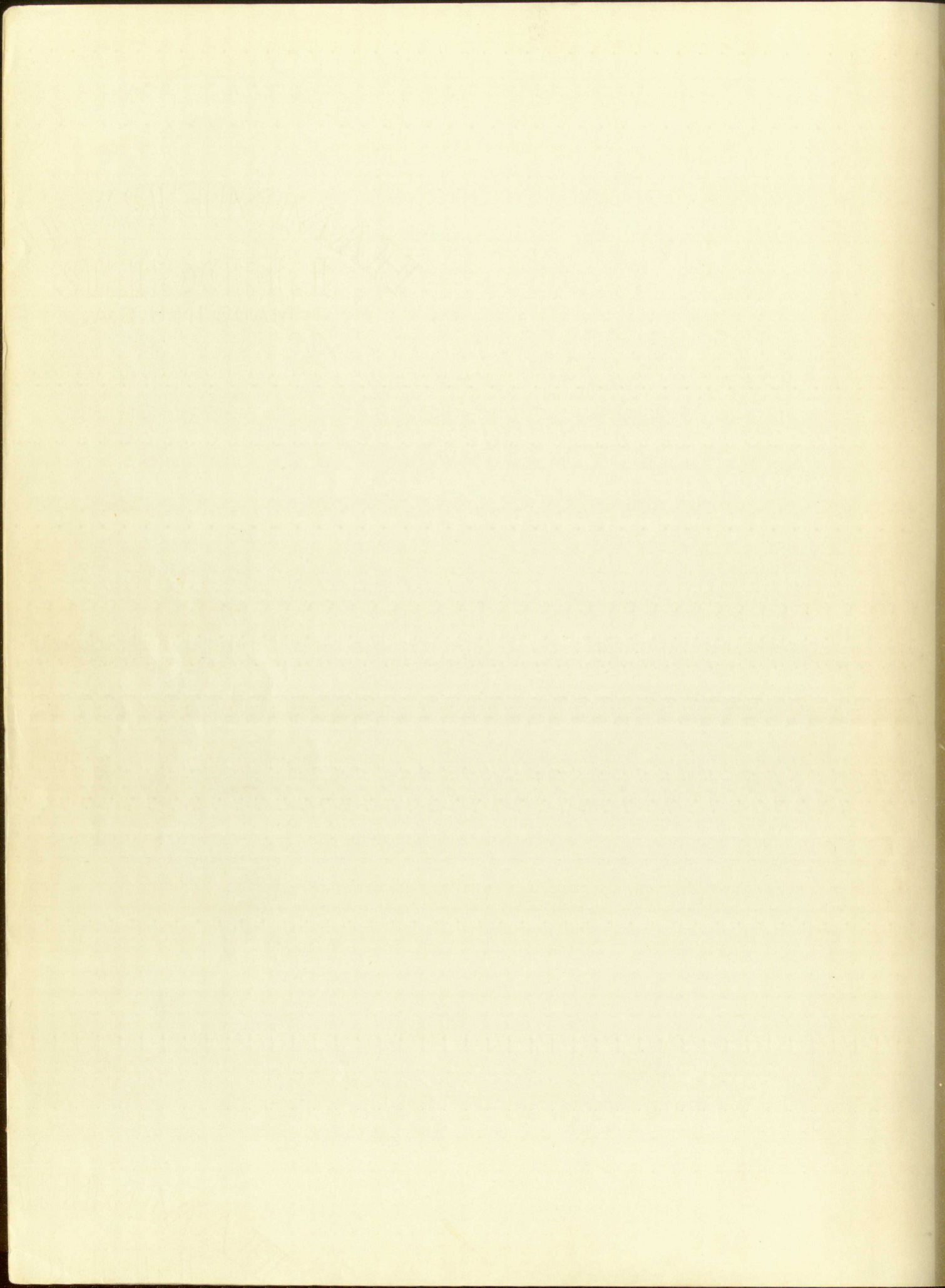
Q77

RECEIVED BY THE DIRECTOR OF THE FBI

FROM THE DIRECTOR OF THE FBI
SUBJECT: [REDACTED]

EFFICIENCY
EZERASE BOND
RAC CONTENT





IMPORTANT!

Special care should be taken to prevent loss or damage of this volume. If lost or damaged, it must be paid for at the current rate of typing.



